# A BLOW-UP CRITERIA AND THE EXISTENCE OF 2D GRAVITY WATER WAVES WITH ANGLED CRESTS 

SIJUE WU


#### Abstract

We consider the two dimensional gravity water wave equation in the regime that includes free surfaces with angled crests. We assume that the fluid is inviscid, incompressible and irrotational, the air density is zero, and we neglect the surface tension. In [21] it was shown that in this regime, only a degenerate Taylor inequality $-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}} \geq 0$ holds, with degeneracy at the singularities; an energy functional $\mathfrak{E}$ was constructed and an aprori estimate was proved. In this paper we show that a (generalized) solution of the water wave equation with smooth data will remain smooth so long as $\mathfrak{E}(t)$ remains finite; and for any data satisfying $\mathfrak{E}(0)<\infty$, the equation is solvable locally in time, for a period depending only on $\mathfrak{E}(0)$.


## 1. Introduction

A class of water wave problems concerns the motion of the interface separating an inviscid, incompressible, irrotational fluid, under the influence of gravity, from a region of zero density (i.e. air) in $n$-dimensional space. It is assumed that the fluid region is below the air region. Assume that the density of the fluid is 1 , the gravitational field is $-\mathbf{k}$, where $\mathbf{k}$ is the unit vector pointing in the upward vertical direction, and at time $t \geq 0$, the free interface is $\Sigma(t)$, and the fluid occupies region $\Omega(t)$. When surface tension is zero, the motion of the fluid is described by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\mathbf{v}_{t}+\mathbf{v} \cdot \nabla \mathbf{v}=-\mathbf{k}-\nabla P \quad \text { on } \Omega(t), t \geq 0  \tag{1.1}\\
\operatorname{div} \mathbf{v}=0, \quad \operatorname{curl} \mathbf{v}=0, \quad \text { on } \Omega(t), t \geq 0 \\
P=0, \quad \text { on } \Sigma(t) \\
(1, \mathbf{v}) \text { is tangent to the free surface }(t, \Sigma(t))
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\mathbf{v}$ is the fluid velocity, $P$ is the fluid pressure. There is an important condition for these problems:

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}} \geq 0 \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

pointwise on the interface, where $\mathbf{n}$ is the outward unit normal to the interface $\Sigma(t)$ [29]. It is well known that when surface tension is neglected and the Taylor sign condition (1.2) fails, the water wave motion can be subject to the Taylor instability [29, 6, 5]. In 30, 31, we showed that for dimensions $n \geq 2$, the strong Taylor stability criterion

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}} \geq c_{0}>0 \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

always holds for the infinite depth water wave problem (1.1), as long as the interface is non-self-intersecting and smooth; and the initial value problem of the water wave system (1.1) is uniquely solvable locally in time in Sobolev spaces $H^{s}, s \geq 4$ for arbitrary given data. Earlier work include Nalimov [25, Yosihara 36] and Craig [12] on local existence and uniqueness for small and smooth data for the 2 d water wave equation (1.1). There have been much work recently, local wellposedness for water waves with additional effects such as surface tension, bottom and vorticity have been proved, c.f. [4, 8, 9, 17, 22, 24, 26, 27, 37;
local wellposedness of (1.1) in low regularity Sobolev spaces where the interfaces are in $C^{3 / 2}$ has been obtained, c.f. [1, 2]. In all of these work, the strong Taylor stability criterion (1.3) is assumed 1 In addition, in the last few years, almost global and global wellposedness for the water wave equation (1.1) in both two and three dimensional spaces for small, smooth and localized initial data have been proved, c.f. [32, 33, 14, 18, 3].

In [21, we studied the 2 d water wave equation (1.1) in the regime that includes free interfaces with angled crests. We constructed an energy functional $\mathfrak{E}(t)$ in this framework and proved an a priori estimate. In this paper we introduce a notion of generalized solutions of (1.1) - a generalized solution is classical provided the interface is non-self-intersecting ${ }^{2}$ we prove a blow-up criteria that states that for smooth initial data, a unique generalized solution of the 2 d water wave equation exists and remains smooth so long as $\mathfrak{E}(t)$ remains finite; and we show that for data satisfying $\mathfrak{E}(0)<\infty$, a generalized solution of the 2 d water wave equation (1.1) exists for a time period depending only on $\mathfrak{E}(0)$; if in addition the initial interface is chord-arc $\sqrt{3}^{3}$ there is a $T>0$, depending only on $\mathfrak{E}(0)$ and the chord-arc constant, so that the interface remains chord-arc and a classical solution of the 2 d water wave equation (1.1) exists for time $t \in[0, T]$. The (generalized) solution is constructed by mollifying the initial data and by showing that the sequence of (generalized) solutions for the mollified data converges to a (generalized) solution for the given data.

The rest of the paper is organized as follows: in section 2, we state and refine the earlier results this paper is built upon, this includes the local wellposedness result for Sobolev data in [30, and the energy functional $\mathfrak{E}$ constructed and the a priori estimate proved in [21], in the context of generalized solutions; the notion of generalized solutions will be introduced in 92.2 and 42.3 . In section 3 we present the main results: a blow-up criteria via the energy functional $\mathfrak{E}$ and the local existence of water waves with angled crests. We prove the blow-up criteria in sections 4 and the local existence in section 5. The majority of the notation are introduced in $\$ 2.1$ with the rest throughout the paper. Some basic preparatory results in analysis are given in Appendix A: various identities that are useful for the paper are derived in Appendix B. Finally in Appendix C we list the quantities which have been shown in [21] are controlled by $\mathfrak{E}$.

## 2. Preliminaries

2.1. Notation and convention. We consider solutions of the water wave equation (1.1) in the setting where the fluid domain $\Omega(t)$ is simply connected, with the free interface $\Sigma(t):=\partial \Omega(t)$ a Jordan curve

$$
\mathbf{v}(z, t) \rightarrow 0, \quad \text { as }|z| \rightarrow \infty
$$

and the interface $\Sigma(t)$ tending to horizontal lines at infinity 5
We use the following notations and conventions: $[A, B]:=A B-B A$ is the commutator of operators $A$ and $B . H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$ is the Sobolev space with norm $\|f\|_{H^{s}}:=\left(\int(1+\right.$ $\left.\left.|\xi|^{2}\right)^{s}|\hat{f}(\xi)|^{2} d \xi\right)^{1 / 2}, \dot{H}^{1 / 2}$ is the Sobolev space with norm $\|f\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}:=\left(\int|\xi \| \hat{f}(\xi)|^{2} d \xi\right)^{1 / 2}$, $L^{p}=L^{p}(\mathbb{R})$ is the $L^{p}$ space with $\|f\|_{L^{p}}:=\left(\int|f(x)|^{p} d x\right)^{1 / p}$ for $1 \leq p<\infty$ and $\|f\|_{L^{\infty}}:=$ ess sup $|f(x)|$. We write $f(t):=f(\cdot, t)$, with $\|f(t)\|_{H^{s}}$ being the Sobolev norm, $\|f(t)\|_{L^{p}}$ being the $L^{p}$ norm of $f(t)$ in the spatial variable. When not specified, all the $H^{s}$ and $L^{p}$ norms are in terms of the spatial variables. Compositions are always in terms of the spatial variables and we write for $f=f(\cdot, t), g=g(\cdot, t), f(g(\cdot, t), t):=f \circ g(\cdot, t):=U_{g} f(\cdot, t)$. We

[^0]identify $(x, y)$ with the complex number $x+i y ; \operatorname{Re} z, \operatorname{Im} z$ are the real and imaginary parts of $z ; \bar{z}=\operatorname{Re} z-i \operatorname{Im} z$ is the complex conjugate of $z . \bar{\Omega}$ is the closure of the domain $\Omega, \partial \Omega$ is the boundary of $\Omega, P_{-}:=\{z \in \mathbb{C}: \operatorname{Im} z<0\}$ is the lower half plane. We write
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
[f, g ; h]:=\frac{1}{\pi i} \int \frac{(f(x)-f(y))(g(x)-g(y))}{(x-y)^{2}} h(y) d y \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

We use $c, C$ to denote universal constants and $c(a, b), C(a), M(a)$ etc. to denote constants that depends on $a, b$ and respectively $a$ etc. Constants appearing in different contexts need not be the same. We write $f \lesssim g$ if there is a universal constant $c$, such that $f \leq c g$. RHS, LHS are the short codes for the "right hand side" and the "left hand side".
2.2. The equation for the free surface in Lagrangian and Riemann mapping variables. Let the free interface $\Sigma(t): z=z(\alpha, t), \alpha \in \mathbb{R}$ be given by Lagrangian parameter $\alpha$, so $z_{t}(\alpha, t)=\mathbf{v}(z(\alpha, t) ; t)$ is the velocity of the fluid particles on the interface, $z_{t t}(\alpha, t)=\mathbf{v}_{t}+(\mathbf{v} \cdot \nabla) \mathbf{v}(z(\alpha, t) ; t)$ is the acceleration; notice that $P=0$ on $\Sigma(t)$ implies that $\nabla P$ is normal to $\Sigma(t)$, therefore $\nabla P=-i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha}$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{a}=-\frac{1}{\left|z_{\alpha}\right|} \frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}} \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the first and third equation of (1.1) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{t t}+i=i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha} \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

The second equation of (1.1): $\operatorname{div} \mathbf{v}=\operatorname{curl} \mathbf{v}=0$ implies that $\overline{\mathbf{v}}$ is holomorphic in the fluid domain $\Omega(t)$, hence $\bar{z}_{t}$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function in $\Omega(t)$. By Proposition A.1 the second equation of (1.1) is equivalent to $\bar{z}_{t}=\mathfrak{H} \bar{z}_{t}$, where $\mathfrak{H}$ is the Hilbert transform associated with the fluid domain $\Omega(t)$. So the motion of the fluid interface $\Sigma(t): z=z(\alpha, t)$ is given by

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
z_{t t}+i=i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha}  \tag{2.4}\\
\bar{z}_{t}=\mathfrak{H} \bar{z}_{t}
\end{array}\right.
$$

(2.4) is a fully nonlinear equation. In 30, Riemann mapping was introduced to analyze the quasi-linear structure of (2.4).

Let $\Phi(\cdot, t): \overline{\Omega(t)} \rightarrow \bar{P}_{-}$be the Riemann mapping taking $\overline{\Omega(t)}$ to the closure of the lower half plane $\bar{P}_{-}$, satisfying $\lim _{z \rightarrow \infty} \Phi_{z}(z, t)=1$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
h(\alpha, t):=\Phi(z(\alpha, t), t) \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

so $h: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a homeomorphism. Let $h^{-1}$ be defined by

$$
h\left(h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), t\right)=\alpha^{\prime}, \quad \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=z \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=z_{t} \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad Z_{t t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=z_{t t} \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the reparametrization of the position, velocity and acceleration of the interface in the Riemann mapping variable $\alpha^{\prime}$. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

etc. We note that $\Phi^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$, so $\left(\Phi^{-1}\right)_{z^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$, and by Proposition A. 1 .

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1\right), \quad \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1\right) . \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe that $\overline{\mathbf{v}} \circ \Phi^{-1}: P_{-} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ is holomorphic in the lower half plane $P_{-}$with $\overline{\mathbf{v}} \circ \Phi^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=$ $\bar{Z}_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$. Precomposing (2.3) with $h^{-1}$ and applying Proposition A.1 to $\overline{\mathbf{v}} \circ \Phi^{-1}$ on $P_{-}$gives the free surface equation in the Riemann mapping variable:

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{t t}+i=i \mathcal{A} Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}  \tag{2.9}\\
\bar{Z}_{t}=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t}
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\mathcal{A} \circ h=\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}$ and $\mathbb{H}$ is the Hilbert transform associated with the lower half plane $P_{-}$:

$$
\mathbb{H} f\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)=\frac{1}{\pi i} \mathrm{pv} . \int \frac{1}{\alpha^{\prime}-\beta^{\prime}} f\left(\beta^{\prime}\right) d \beta^{\prime}
$$

From the chain rule, we know for $f=f(\cdot, t), U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} f=\left(\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) f$ where

$$
b:=h_{t} \circ h^{-1}
$$

so $Z_{t t}=\left(\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) Z_{t}=\left(\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right)^{2} Z$. Let $A_{1}:=\mathcal{A}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}$. Multiply $\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}$ to the first equation of (2.9) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(Z_{t t}+i\right)=i A_{1} \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

In [30, it was shown that systems (1.1), (2.4) and (2.9)-(2.8) with $b, A_{1}$ given by (2.18), (2.19) are equivalent in the regime of nonself-intersecting interfaces $z=z(\cdot, t){ }^{6}$

However the system (2.9)-(2.8) is well defined even if $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ is self-intersecting. In constructing the approximating sequence of solutions from the mollified data, it is convenient to allow self-intersecting solutions of (2.9)-(2.8). In this context, $Z$ and $z, Z_{t}, z_{t}$ etc. are related via (2.6) and (2.7) through a homeomorphism $h=h(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, and from (2.9)(2.8) we can show that $h, A_{1}$ satisfy (2.18)-(2.19), see Appendix B.1. For not necessarily non-self-intersecting solutions $Z$ of (2.9)-(2.8) we will abuse terminologies by continue saying $Z, Z_{t}$ etc. are in the Riemann mapping variable, $z, z_{t}$ etc. are in the Lagrangian coordinates, $Z, Z_{t}, Z_{t t}$ are the interface, velocity and acceleration.

Let's consider the solution of (2.9)-(2.8) in the "fluid domain" 7
general-soln
2.3. Generalized solutions of the water wave equation. \&et $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ be a solution of (2.9)-(2.8), let $F(\cdot, t): P_{-} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}, \Psi(\cdot, t): P_{-} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be holomorphic functions, continuous on $\bar{P}_{-}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
F\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=\bar{Z}_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (B.4) of Appendix B.1 and (2.11),

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t} \circ h^{-1}=\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}=\frac{\bar{F}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}-\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} . \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now $\bar{z}_{t}(\alpha, t)=\bar{Z}_{t}(h(\alpha, t), t)=F(h(\alpha, t), t)$, so

$$
\bar{z}_{t t}=F_{t} \circ h+F_{z^{\prime}} \circ h h_{t}=U_{h}\left\{F_{t}-\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}+\frac{\bar{F}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}\right\}
$$

therefore $\bar{Z}_{t t}$ is the trace of the function $F_{t}-\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}+\frac{\bar{F}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}$ on $\partial P_{-} ; Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)$ is then the trace of the function $\Psi_{z^{\prime}} F_{t}-\Psi_{t} F_{z^{\prime}}+\bar{F} F_{z^{\prime}}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}$ on $\partial P_{-}$. By (2.10),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}} F_{t}-\Psi_{t} F_{z^{\prime}}+\bar{F} F_{z^{\prime}}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}=i A_{1}, \quad \text { on } \partial P_{-} \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^1]On the left hand side of (2.13), $\Psi_{z^{\prime}} F_{t}-\Psi_{t} F_{z^{\prime}}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}$ is holomorphic on $P_{-}$, while $\bar{F} F_{z^{\prime}}=$ $\partial_{z^{\prime}}(\bar{F} F)$; we recall from complex analysis, $\partial_{z^{\prime}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right)$. So there is a real valued function $\mathfrak{P}: \mathbb{P}_{-} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}} F_{t}-\Psi_{t} F_{z^{\prime}}+\bar{F} F_{z^{\prime}}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}=-\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}, \quad \text { on } P_{-} \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

moreover by (2.13), because $i A_{1}$ is purely imaginary,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{P}=0, \quad \text { on } \partial P_{-} \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that by applying $\partial_{x^{\prime}}+i \partial_{y^{\prime}}$ to both sides of (2.14), $\mathfrak{P}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta \mathfrak{P}=-2\left|F_{z^{\prime}}\right|^{2} \quad \text { on } P_{-} . \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

If in addition $\Sigma(t)=\left\{Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \mid \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}\right\}$ is a Jordan curve with

$$
\lim _{\left|\alpha^{\prime}\right| \rightarrow \infty} Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=1
$$

let $\Omega(t)$ be the domain bounded by $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ from the above, then $Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}$ winds the boundary of $\Omega(t)$ exactly once. By the argument principle, $\Psi: \bar{P}_{-} \rightarrow \bar{\Omega}(t)$ is one-to-one and onto, $\Psi^{-1}: \Omega(t) \rightarrow P_{-}$exists and is a holomorphic function. In this case, it is easy to check by the chain rule that equation (2.14) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(F \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)_{t}+\bar{F} \circ \Psi^{-1}\left(F \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)_{z}+\left(\partial_{x}-i \partial_{y}\right)\left(\mathfrak{P} \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)=i, \quad \text { on } \Omega(t) \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the Euler equation, i.e. the first equation of (1.1) in complex form. Therefore $\overline{\mathbf{v}}=$ $F \circ \Psi^{-1}, P=\mathfrak{P} \circ \Psi^{-1}$ is a solution of the water wave equation (1.1), with $\Sigma(t): Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ the boundary of the fluid domain $\Omega(t)$.

In what follows we give the local wellposedness result of [30] and the a priori estimate of [21] for solutions of (2.9)-(2.8).
2.4. Local wellposedness in Sobolev spaces. In 30 we derived a quasi-linearization of (2.9)-(2.8), the system (4.6)-(4.7) of 30 by taking one derivative to $t$ to equation (2.3) and analyzed the quantities $b$ and $A_{1} 9$ and via $A_{1}$, we showed that the strong Taylor inequality (1.3) always holds for smooth nonself-intersecting interfaces. In addition, we proved that the Cauchy problem of the system (4.6)-(4.7) of 30 is locally well-posed in Sobolev spaces.
prop:a1 Proposition 2.1 (Lemma 3.1 and (4.7) of [30, Proposition 2.2 and (2.18) of 35). We have 1.

$$
\begin{equation*}
b:=h_{t} \circ h^{-1}=\operatorname{Re}\left(\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1\right)\right)+2 \operatorname{Re} Z_{t} \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. 

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{1}=1-\operatorname{Im}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}=1+\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int \frac{\left|Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z_{t}\left(\beta^{\prime}, t\right)\right|^{2}}{\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\beta^{\prime}\right)^{2}} d \beta^{\prime} \geq 1 \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

3. 

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\left.\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}}\right|_{Z=Z(\cdot, t)}=\frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|} \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

in particular if the interface $\Sigma(t) \in C^{1, \gamma}$ for some $\gamma>0$, then the strong Taylor sign condition (1.3) holds.

Remark 2.2. By (2.20), the Taylor sign condition (1.2) always holds. Assume $\Sigma(t)$ is non-self-intersecting with angled crests, assume the interior angle at a crest is $\nu$. Around the crest, we know the Riemann mapping $\Phi^{-1}$ (we move the singular point to the origin) behaves like

$$
\Phi^{-1}\left(z^{\prime}\right) \approx\left(z^{\prime}\right)^{r}, \quad \text { with } \nu=r \pi
$$

[^2]so $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} \approx\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)^{r-1}$. From (2.10) and the fact $A_{1} \geq 1$, the interior angle at the crest must be $\leq \pi$ if the acceleration $\left|Z_{t t}\right| \neq \infty$, and $-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}}=0$ at the singularities where the interior angles are $<\pi 10$ cf. [21], §3.

Let $h(\alpha, 0)=\alpha$ for $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}$; let the initial interface $Z(\cdot, 0):=Z(0)$, the initial velocity $Z_{t}(\cdot, 0):=Z_{t}(0)$ be given such that $Z(0)$ satisfy (2.8) and $Z_{t}(0)$ satisfy $\bar{Z}_{t}(0)=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t}(0)$; let $A_{1}$ be given by (2.19), the initial acceleration $Z_{t t}(0)$ satisfy (2.10), and $a_{0}=\frac{A_{1}(\cdot, 0)}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)\right|^{2}}$. By Theorem 5.11 of [30] and a refinement of the argument in $\S 6$ of 30, the following local existence result holds.
prop:local-s
Proposition 2.3 (local existence in Sobolev spaces, cf. Theorem 5.11, §6 of [30]). Let $s \geq$ 4. Assume that $Z_{t}(0) \in H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R}), Z_{t t}(0) \in H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$ and $a_{0} \geq c_{0}>0$ for some constant $c_{0}>0.11$ Then there is $T>0.12$ such that on $[0, T]$, the initial value problem of (2.9) -(2.8)(2.18) -(2.19) has a unique solution $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$, satisfying $\left(Z_{t t}, Z_{t}\right) \in C^{l}\left([0, T], H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R}) \times\right.$ $\left.H^{s+1 / 2-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, and $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1 \in C^{l}\left([0, T], H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, for $l=0,1$.

Moreover if $T^{*}$ is the supremum over all such times $T$, then either $T^{*}=\infty$, or $T^{*}<\infty$, but

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}+\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}\right)=\infty \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Notice that the system (4.6)-(4.7) of 30] is a system for the horizontal velocity $w=\operatorname{Re} Z_{t}$ and horizontal acceleration $u=\operatorname{Re} Z_{t t}$, the interface doesn't appear explicitly; it is well-defined even if the interface $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ is self-intersecting. The first part of Proposition 2.3 follows from Theorem 5.11, and the argument from the second half of page 70 to the first half of page 71 of $\S 6$ of [30].

Now assume $T^{*}<\infty$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}+\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}\right):=M_{0}<\infty \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

We want to show that the solution $Z$ of the system (2.9)-(2.8)-(2.18)-(2.19) can be extended beyond $T^{*}$ by a time $T^{\prime}>0$ that depends only on $M_{0}, c_{0},\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}}$ and $\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}}$, contradicting with the maximality of $T^{*}$.

Let $T<T^{*}$ be arbitrary chosen. Let $a=a(\cdot, t), b=b(\cdot, t)$ be given by (4.7) of 30, and let $h=h(\cdot, t)$ satisfy

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d h}{d t}=b(h, t)  \tag{2.23}\\
h(\alpha, 0)=\alpha
\end{array}\right.
$$

By Theorem 5.11 of 30 and the argument in $\S 6$ of 30, we know $b \in C\left([0, T], H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ with $\|b(t)\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}} \leq c\left(\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}},\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{s}}\right)$, and $h(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a diffeomorphism with $h(\alpha, t)-\alpha \in C\left([0, T], H^{s+1 / 2}\right)$. Moreover $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=z \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$ satisfies (2.10), and for $t \in[0, T]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{s}}+\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}} \leq d_{0} e^{K t}\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}}+\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}}\right) \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $K=K(M(T), \mathfrak{a}(T), s), d_{0}=d(M(T), \mathfrak{a}(T), s)$ are constants depending on

$$
\mathfrak{a}(T):=\inf _{\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]} a\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad M(T)=\sup _{[0, T]}\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}+\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}\right)
$$

and $K(M(T), \mathfrak{a}(T), s) \rightarrow \infty, d(M(T), \mathfrak{a}(T), s) \rightarrow \infty$ as $M(T) \rightarrow \infty, \mathfrak{a}(T) \rightarrow 0$. We want to show that $\mathfrak{a}(T) \geq \frac{1}{C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)}$ for some constant $C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)>0$.

[^3]By (2.10),

$$
a\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\frac{\left|Z_{t t}(t)+i\right|^{2}}{A_{1}(t)}=\frac{A_{1}(t)}{\left|Z_{\alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right|^{2}}
$$

so it suffices to show that there is a constant $c\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)$, such that $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq c\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)$ for all $t \in[0, T]$. From the assumption $a_{0}=\frac{A_{1}(\cdot, 0)}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)\right|^{2}} \geq c_{0},\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)\right|^{2} \leq \frac{A_{1}(\cdot, 0)}{c_{0}}$. Applying the Hardy's inequality Proposion A. 3 and Cauchy-Schwarz on (2.19) yields

$$
\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq \frac{\left\|A_{1}(0)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}}{c_{0}} \lesssim \frac{1+\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}}{c_{0}}
$$

We calculate $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$ by the fundamental theorem of calculus.
Differentiating (2.23) gives

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d h_{\alpha}}{d t}=b_{\alpha^{\prime}}(h, t) h_{\alpha}  \tag{2.25}\\
h_{\alpha}(\alpha, 0)=1
\end{array}\right.
$$

So on $[0, T]$,

$$
e^{-\int_{0}^{t}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}(\tau)\right\|_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})} d \tau} \leq h_{\alpha}(\alpha, t) \leq e^{\int_{0}^{t}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}(\tau)\right\|_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})} d \tau}
$$

and by Sobolev embedding, $\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}(\tau)\right\|_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})} \lesssim\|b(\tau)\|_{H^{2}(\mathbb{R})} \leq c\left(\left\|Z_{t}(\tau)\right\|_{H^{2}},\left\|Z_{t t}(\tau)\right\|_{H^{2}}\right)$. Because $h(\alpha, 0)=\alpha, z(\alpha, 0)=Z(\alpha, 0)$ and

$$
z_{\alpha}(\alpha, t)=Z_{\alpha}(\alpha, 0)+\int_{0}^{t} z_{t \alpha}(\alpha, \tau) d \tau
$$

By the chain rule $z_{t \alpha}=Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \circ h h_{\alpha}, z_{\alpha}=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} \circ h h_{\alpha}$; so for $t \in[0, T]$,

$$
\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left(\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\int_{0}^{t}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}(\tau)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|h_{\alpha}(\tau)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} d \tau\right)\left\|\frac{1}{h_{\alpha}(t)}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)
$$

for some constant $C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)$ depending on $M_{0}, c_{0}$ and $T^{*}$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{a}(T)=\inf _{\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]} a\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=\inf _{\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]]} \frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}} \geq \frac{1}{C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)} . \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now (2.22), (2.24) and (2.26) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|Z_{t t}(T)\right\|_{H^{s}}+\left\|Z_{t}(T)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}} & \leq c\left(M_{0}, c_{0},\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}},\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}}\right) \\
\text { and } \quad a(\cdot, T) & \geq \frac{1}{C\left(M_{0}, c_{0}\right)}>0
\end{aligned}
$$

So by the first part of Proposition [2.3, the solution $Z$ can be extended onto $\left[T, T+T^{\prime}\right]$, for some $T^{\prime}>0$ depending only on $M_{0}, c_{0}$ and $\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}},\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}}$. This contradicts with the definition of $T^{*}$, so either $T^{*}=\infty$ or (2.21) holds.

Let $D_{\alpha}:=\frac{1}{z_{\alpha}} \partial_{\alpha}$ and $D_{\alpha^{\prime}}:=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$. By (2.8) and the basic fact that product of holomorphic functions is holomorphic, if $g$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$, then $D_{\alpha^{\prime}} g$ is also the boundary value of a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$. Notice that for any function $f$,

$$
\left(D_{\alpha} f\right) \circ h^{-1}=D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(f \circ h^{-1}\right)
$$

2.5. An a priori estimate for water waves with angled crests. In [21], we studied the water wave equation (1.1) in the regime that includes interfaces with angled crests in a symmetric periodic setting, we constructed an energy functional for this regime and proved an a priori estimate. The same analysis applies to the whole line setting. The main difference is that in the whole line case, we do not need to consider the means of the various quantities; and in the proof of the a priori estimate, the argument in the footnote 21 of [21] works, so we do not need the Peter-Paul trick. Hence in the whole line case, that part of the proof is simpler. Additionally, with the minor modifications given in Appendix B.1 the argument in [21] applies more generally to solutions of (2.9)-(2.8)-(2.18)-(2.19), without any non-self-intersecting assumptions, and the characterization of the energy given in $\S 10$ of 21] also holds. In this subsection we present the results of [21] in the whole line setting for solutions of $(\sqrt{2.9})-(2.8)-(\sqrt{2.18})-(\sqrt{2.19})$, we will only show how to handle the differences between the symmetric periodic and the whole line cases.

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{a}(t)=\left\|\left(\partial_{t} D_{\alpha}^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right) \circ h^{-1}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(1 / A_{1}\right)}^{2}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}(t)\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2}+\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(1 / A_{1}\right)}^{2} \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{b}(t)=\left\|\partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\frac{1}{\mathrm{a}}\right)}^{2}+\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}(t)\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2}+\left\|\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{E}(t)=E_{a}(t)+E_{b}(t)+\left\|\bar{Z}_{t t}(t)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that we replaced the third term $\left|\bar{z}_{t t}\left(\alpha_{0}, t\right)-i\right|$ in the energy of [21] by $\left\|\bar{Z}_{t t}(t)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$. In $\S 10$ of [21], we showed that the regime $\mathfrak{E}<\infty$ includes interfaces with angled crests with interior angles $<\frac{\pi}{2}$, in particular, the self-similar solutions constructed in 34 has finite energy $\mathfrak{E}$.
prop:a priori Theorem 2.4 (cf. Theorem 2 of [21). Let $Z=Z(\cdot, t), t \in\left[0, T^{\prime}\right]$ be a solution of the system (2.9) -(2.8) -(2.18) -(2.19), satisfying $\left(Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}, Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right) \in C^{l}\left(\left[0, T^{\prime}\right], H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s+1 / 2-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, $l=0,1$ for some $s \geq 3$ and $Z_{t t} \in C\left(\left[0, T^{\prime}\right], L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. Then there are $T:=T(\mathfrak{E}(0))>0$, $C=C(\mathfrak{E}(0))>0$, depending only on $\mathfrak{E}(0), 13$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, \min \left\{T, T^{\prime}\right\}\right]} \mathfrak{E}(t) \leq C(\mathfrak{E}(0))<\infty . \tag{2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $h(\alpha, 0)=\alpha, \alpha \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\mathfrak{e}(t)=E_{a}(t)+E_{b}(t)
$$

We only need to show how to handle the term $\left\|\bar{Z}_{t t}(t)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$. The argument in §4.4.3 of [21] shows that for each given $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, t)-i\right| \leq\left(\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right)\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, t)-i\right| . \tag{2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice from the estimate for $\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$ in [21] and Sobolev embedding that in fact

$$
\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq c(\mathfrak{e})
$$

where $c$ is a polynomial with nonnegative universal coefficients. Therefore

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, t)-i\right| \leq c(\mathfrak{e})\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, t)-i\right|
$$

By Gronwall, $\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, t)-i\right| \leq\left|\bar{z}_{t t}(\alpha, 0)-i\right| e^{\int_{0}^{t} c(\mathfrak{e}(\tau)) d \tau}$ hence

$$
\left\|\bar{z}_{t t}(t)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left\|\bar{z}_{t t}(0)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}} e^{\int_{0}^{t} c(\mathfrak{e}(\tau)) d \tau}
$$

[^4]Now let

$$
\mathfrak{E}_{1}(t)=\mathfrak{e}(t)+\left\|\bar{z}_{t t}(0)-i\right\|_{L^{\infty}} e^{\int_{0}^{t} c(\mathfrak{e}(\tau)) d \tau}
$$

so $\mathfrak{E}(t) \leq \mathfrak{E}_{1}(t)$, and $\mathfrak{E}(0)=\mathfrak{E}_{1}(0)$. By the whole line counterpart of Theorem 2 of [21], $\frac{d}{d t} \mathfrak{e}(t) \leq p(\mathfrak{E}(t))$ for some polynomial $p$ with nonnegative universal coefficients, therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} \mathfrak{E}_{1}(t) \leq p\left(\mathfrak{E}_{1}(t)\right)+C\left(\mathfrak{E}_{1}(t)\right) \tag{2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying Gronwall again yields the conclusion of Theorem 2.4.

Let

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{E}(t)=\left\|\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} & +\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}+\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}  \tag{2.33}\\
& +\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2}+\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

As was shown in $\S 10$ of [21], we have the following characterization of the energy $\mathfrak{E}$.
prop:energy-eq
Proposition 2.5 (A characterization of $\mathfrak{E}$ via $\mathcal{E}$, cf. $\S 10$ of [21]). There are polynomials $C_{1}$ and $C_{2}$, with nonnegative universal coefficients, such that for solutions $Z$ of (2.9) -(2.8),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{E}(t) \leq C_{1}(\mathfrak{E}(t)), \quad \text { and } \quad \mathfrak{E}(t) \leq C_{2}(\mathcal{E}(t)) \tag{2.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

2.6. A description of the class $\mathcal{E}<\infty$ in the fluid domain. We give here an equivalent description of the class $\mathcal{E}<\infty$ for solutions $Z$ of (2.9)-(2.8) in the "fluid domain".

Let $1<p \leq \infty$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{y}(x)=\frac{-y}{\pi\left(x^{2}+y^{2}\right)}, \quad y<0 \tag{2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

be the Poisson kernel. We know for any holomorphic function $G$ on $P_{-}$,

$$
\sup _{y<0}\|G(x+i y)\|_{L^{p}(\mathbb{R}, d x)}<\infty
$$

if and only if there exists $g \in L^{p}(\mathbb{R})$ such that $G(x+i y)=K_{y} * g(x)$. In this case, $\sup _{y<0}\|G(x+i y)\|_{L^{p}(\mathbb{R}, d x)}=\|g\|_{L^{p}}$. Moreover, if $g \in L^{p}(\mathbb{R}), 1<p<\infty, \lim _{y \rightarrow 0-} K_{y} *$ $g(x)=g(x)$ in $L^{p}(\mathbb{R})$ and if $g \in L^{\infty} \cap C(\mathbb{R}), \lim _{y \rightarrow 0-} K_{y} * g(x)=g(x)$ for all $x \in \mathbb{R}$.

Let $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ be a solution of (2.9)-(2.8), let $\Psi, F$ be holomorphic functions on $P_{-}$, continuous on $\bar{P}_{-}$, such that

$$
Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \bar{Z}_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=F\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)
$$

Notice that all the quantities in (2.33) are boundary values of some holomorphic functions on $P_{-}$. Let $z^{\prime}=x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}$, where $x^{\prime}, y^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}$. $\mathcal{E}(t)<\infty$ is equivalent $\mathrm{t} \sqrt[14]{14}$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathcal{E}_{1}(t):=\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F_{z^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} \partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}\right)(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2} \\
& +\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\right)(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2} \\
& +\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\left\{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\right\}^{2}} \partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}\right)(t)\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} F_{z^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2}  \tag{2.36}\\
& +\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} \partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}} \partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\right)\right)(t)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}^{2}<\infty .
\end{align*}
$$

[^5]
## 3. The main Results

We are now ready to state the main results of the paper. For simplicity we present and prove the results in the whole line setting. The same results hold for the symmetric periodic setting as studied in [21] and the proofs are similar, except for some minor modifications.

Let $h(\alpha, 0)=\alpha$ for $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}$; let the initial interface $Z(\cdot, 0):=Z(0)$, the initial velocity $Z_{t}(\cdot, 0):=Z_{t}(0)$ be given such that $Z(0)$ satisfy (2.8) and $Z_{t}(0)$ satisfy $\bar{Z}_{t}(0)=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t}(0)$; let $A_{1}$ be given by (2.19), the initial acceleration $Z_{t t}(0)$ satisfy (2.10).
blow-up Theorem 3.1 (A blow-up criteria via $\mathfrak{E})$. Let $s \geq 4$. Assume $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0) \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}), Z_{t}(0) \in$ $H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R})$ and $Z_{t t}(0) \in H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$. Then there is $T>0$, such that on $[0, T]$, the initial value problem of (2.9) -(2.8) has a unique solution $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$, satisfying $\left(Z_{t t}, Z_{t}\right) \in$ $C^{l}\left([0, T], H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s+1 / 2-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ for $l=0,1$, and $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1 \in C\left([0, T], H^{s}(\mathbb{R})\right)$.

Moreover if $T^{*}$ is the supremum over all such times $T$, then either $T^{*}=\infty$, or $T^{*}<\infty$, but

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathfrak{E}(t)=\infty \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 3.2. 1. Assume $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0) \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R})$. We note that by the definition $\mathcal{A}:=\frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}}$, $a_{0}=\frac{A_{1}(\cdot, 0)}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)\right|^{2}} \geq c_{0}>0$ for some constant $c_{0}>0$. So the first part of Theorem 3.1 is the local wellposedness in Sobolev spaces as stated in Proposition 2.3. The novelty of Theorem 3.1 is the new blow up criteria via the energy functional $\mathfrak{E}$.
2. Notice that $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathfrak{E}(t)<\infty$ if and only if $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathcal{E}(t)<\infty$, by Proposition 2.5,

By the discussion of 92.3 , a solution of (2.9) -(2.8) is a solution of the water wave equation (1.1) if and only if $\Sigma(t)=\left\{Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \mid \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}\right\}$ is Jordan. So we can modify the statement of Theorem 3.1 to give a blow-up criteria for the water wave equation (1.1). For the first half of the statements in Corollary 3.3, see Theorem 6.1 of 30 .
blow-up1 Corollary 3.3 (A blow-up criteria via $\mathfrak{E}$ ). Let $s \geq 4$. Assume in addition $Z=Z(\cdot, 0)$ is non-self-intersecting. Then there is $T>0$, such that on $[0, T]$, the initial value problem of (1.1) has a unique solution, with the properties that the interface $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ is nonselfintersecting and $\left(Z_{t t}, Z_{t}\right) \in C^{l}\left([0, T], H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s+1 / 2-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ for $l=0,1$, and $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1 \in$ $C\left([0, T], H^{s}(\mathbb{R})\right)$.

Moreover if $T^{*}$ is the supremum over all such times $T$, then either $T^{*}=\infty$, or $T^{*}<\infty$, but

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathfrak{E}(t)=\infty, \quad \text { or } \quad Z=Z(\cdot, t) \text { becomes self-intersecting at } t=T^{*} \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

3.1. The initial data. 15 Let $\Omega(0)$ be the initial fluid domain, with the interface $\Sigma(0):=$ $\partial \Omega(0)$ being a Jordan curve that tends to horizontal lines at infinity, and let $\Phi(\cdot, 0): \Omega(0) \rightarrow$ $P_{-}$be the Riemann Mapping such that $\lim _{z \rightarrow \infty} \Phi_{z}(z, 0)=1$. We know $\Phi(\cdot, 0): \overline{\Omega(0)} \rightarrow \bar{P}_{-}$ is a homeomorphism. Let $\Psi(\cdot, 0):=\Phi^{-1}(\cdot, 0)$, and $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right):=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$, so $Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$ : $\mathbb{R} \rightarrow \Sigma(0)$ is the parametrization of $\Sigma(0)$ in the Riemann Mapping variable. Let $\mathbf{v}(\cdot, 0)$ : $\Omega(0) \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be the initial velocity field, and $F\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=\overline{\mathbf{v}}\left(\Psi\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right), 0\right)$. Assume $\overline{\mathbf{v}}(\cdot, 0)$ is holomorphic on $\Omega(0)$, so $F(\cdot, 0)$ is holomorphic on $P_{-}$. Assume $F(\cdot, 0), \Psi(\cdot, 0)$ satisfy (2.36) at $t=0$. In addition, assume 16

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{0}:=\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, 0\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, 0\right)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}<\infty \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

th:local Theorem 3.4 (Local existence in the $\mathfrak{E}<\infty$ regime). 1. There exists $T_{0}>0$, depending only on $\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$, such that on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, the initial value problem of the water wave equation (1.1) has a generalized solution $(F, \Psi, \mathfrak{P})$ in the sense of (2.14)-(2.15), with the properties that $F(\cdot, t), \Psi(\cdot, t)$ are holomorphic on $P_{-}$for each fixed $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right], F, \Psi, \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}, \mathfrak{P}$ are continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right], F, \Psi$ are continuous differentiable on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right], \mathfrak{P}$ is continuous differentiable with respect to the spatial variables on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$; during this time, $\mathcal{E}_{1}(t)<\infty$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}<\infty \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The generalized solution gives rise to a solution $(\overline{\mathbf{v}}, P)=\left(F \circ \Psi^{-1}, \mathfrak{P} \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)$ of the water wave equation (1.1) so long as $\Sigma(t)=\left\{Z=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \mid \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}\right\}$ is a Jordan curve.
2. If in addition, the initial interface is chord-arc, that is, $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0) \in L_{l o c}^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ and there is $0<\delta<1$, such that

$$
\delta \int_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\beta^{\prime}}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \leq\left|Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)-Z\left(\beta^{\prime}, 0\right)\right| \leq \int_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\beta^{\prime}}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma, \quad \forall-\infty<\alpha^{\prime}<\beta^{\prime}<\infty
$$

Then there is $T_{0}>0, T_{1}>0, T_{0}, T_{1}$ depend only on $\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$, such that on $\left[0, \min \left\{T_{0}, \frac{\delta}{T_{1}}\right\}\right]$, the initial value problem of the water wave equation (1.1) has a solution, satisfying $\mathcal{E}_{1}(t)<\infty$ and (3.4), and the interface $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ is chord-arc.

## 4. The proof of Theorem 3.1

We only need to prove the second part, the blow-up criteria of Theorem 3.1. We assume $T^{*}<\infty$, for otherwise we are done.

Let $Z=Z(\cdot, t), t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)$ be a solution of (2.9)-(2.8):

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{t t}+i=i \mathcal{A} Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with constraint

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\bar{Z}_{t}=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t},  \tag{4.2}\\
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1\right), \quad \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

satisfying $\left(Z_{t t}, Z_{t}\right) \in C^{l}\left(\left[0, T^{*}\right), H^{s-l}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s+1 / 2-l}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ for $l=0,1$, and $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1 \in$ $C\left(\left[0, T^{*}\right), H^{s}(\mathbb{R})\right)$. Precompose (4.1) with $h$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{t t}+i=i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}:=\mathcal{A} \circ h$. Differentiating (4.3) with respect to $t$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{z}_{t t t}+i \mathfrak{a} \bar{z}_{t \alpha}=-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}=\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\left(\bar{z}_{t t}-i\right) \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Precompose (4.4) with $h^{-1}$. This gives the corresponding equation in the Riemann mapping variable:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{Z}_{t t t}+i \mathcal{A} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}=\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

interface-e-2
interface-e2

We know $\bar{Z}_{t t t}=\left(\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right)^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}$ and $\bar{Z}_{t t}=\left(\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \bar{Z}_{t}$, where $b:=h_{t} \circ h^{-1}$. The analysis in Appendix B.1 shows that $b$ and $A_{1}:=\mathcal{A}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}$ are as given in (2.18), (2.19), and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}=\frac{-\operatorname{Im}\left(2\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}+2\left[Z_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}-\left[Z_{t}, Z_{t} ; D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right]\right)}{A_{1}} \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[Z_{t}, Z_{t} ; D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right]:=\frac{1}{\pi i} \int \frac{\left(Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z_{t}\left(\beta^{\prime}, t\right)\right)^{2}}{\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\beta^{\prime}\right)^{2}} D_{\beta^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\left(\beta^{\prime}, t\right) d \beta^{\prime} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

(4.4)-(4.2) or equivalently (4.5)-(4.2) with $b, A_{1}$ and $\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}$ given by (2.18), (2.19) and (4.6) is a quasilinear equation of the hyperbolic type in the regime of smooth interfaces,
with the right hand side consisting of lower order terms. 17 However in the regime that includes interfaces with angled crests, since $\mathcal{A}$ and $-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}}$ equal to zero at the crests where the interior angles are $<\pi$, the left hand side of (4.5) (or (4.4)) is degenerate hyperbolic.

We have the following basic energy inequality.
basic-e Lemma 4.1 (Basic energy inequality). Assume $\theta=\theta(\alpha, t), \alpha \in \mathbb{R}, t \in[0, T)$ is smooth, decays fast at the spatial infinity and satisfies $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\theta \circ h^{-1}\right)=0$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{t}^{2} \theta+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha} \theta=G_{\theta} \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{\theta}(t):=\int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}}\left|\theta_{t}\right|^{2} d \alpha+i \int \partial_{\alpha} \theta \bar{\theta} d \alpha+\int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}}|\theta|^{2} d \alpha \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} E_{\theta}(t) \leq\left(\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+1\right) E_{\theta}(t)+2 E_{\theta}(t)^{1 / 2}\left(\int \frac{\left|G_{\theta}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a}} d \alpha\right)^{1 / 2} \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 4.2. Since $\mathcal{A} \circ h:=\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}$, upon changing to the Riemann mapping variable,

$$
E_{\theta}(t)=\int \frac{1}{\mathcal{A}}\left(\left|\theta_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right|^{2}+\left|\theta \circ h^{-1}\right|^{2}\right) d \alpha^{\prime}+i \int \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\theta \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{\theta} \circ h^{-1} d \alpha^{\prime}
$$

By $\theta \circ h^{-1}=\mathbb{H}\left(\theta \circ h^{-1}\right)$ and (A.5),

$$
i \int \partial_{\alpha} \theta \bar{\theta} d \alpha=i \int \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\theta \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{\theta} \circ h^{-1} d \alpha^{\prime}=\left\|\theta \circ h^{-1}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2} \geq 0
$$

Proof. We have 18

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d t} E_{\theta}(t)= & 2 \operatorname{Re} \int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}} \theta_{t t} \bar{\theta}_{t} d \alpha-\int \frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}^{2}}\left|\theta_{t}\right|^{2} d \alpha+i \int \partial_{\alpha} \theta_{t} \bar{\theta} d \alpha+i \int \partial_{\alpha} \theta \bar{\theta}_{t} d \alpha \\
& +2 \operatorname{Re} \int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}} \theta_{t} \bar{\theta} d \alpha-\int \frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}^{2}}|\theta|^{2} d \alpha  \tag{4.11}\\
= & 2 \operatorname{Re} \int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}}\left(\theta_{t t}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha} \theta\right) \bar{\theta}_{t} d \alpha-\int \frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}^{2}}\left(\left|\theta_{t}\right|^{2}+|\theta|^{2}\right) d \alpha+2 \operatorname{Re} \int \frac{1}{\mathfrak{a}} \theta_{t} \bar{\theta} d \alpha
\end{align*}
$$

Here in the second step we used integration by parts on the third term. (4.8), CauchySchwarz and the fact that $i \int \partial_{\alpha} \theta \bar{\theta} d \alpha \geq 0$ gives (4.10).

Apply $D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1}, k=2,3$ to (4.4), then commute $D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1}$ with $\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1} \bar{z}_{t}=D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right)+\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1}\right] \bar{z}_{t} \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{k}(t):=E_{D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{k-1} \bar{z}_{t}}(t) \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because $\mathcal{A}=\frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}}$ and $U_{h}^{-1} D_{\alpha} U_{h}=D_{\alpha^{\prime}}=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{k}(t)=\int \frac{1}{A_{1}}\left(\left|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \bar{Z}_{t}\right|^{2}+\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \bar{Z}_{t}\right|^{2}\right) d \alpha^{\prime}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2} \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

We prove Theorem 3.1 via the following two Propositions.
step1 Proposition 4.3. There exists a polynomial $p_{1}=p_{1}(x)$ with universal coefficients such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} E_{2}(t) \leq p_{1}(\mathfrak{E}(t)) E_{2}(t) \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^6]step2 Proposition 4.4. There exist polynomials $p_{2}=p_{2}(x, y)$ and $p_{3}=p_{3}(x, y)$ with universal coefficients such that
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} E_{3}(t) \leq p_{2}\left(\mathfrak{E}(t), E_{2}(t)\right) E_{3}(t)+p_{3}\left(\mathfrak{E}(t), E_{2}(t)\right) \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Propositions 4.3 and 4.4 give that

$$
\begin{align*}
E_{2}(t) & \leq E_{2}(0) e^{\int_{0}^{t} p_{1}(\mathfrak{E}(s)) d s} ; \quad \text { and } \\
E_{3}(t) & \leq\left(E_{3}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} p_{3}\left(\mathfrak{E}(s), E_{2}(s)\right) d s\right) e^{\int_{0}^{t} p_{2}\left(\mathfrak{E}(s), E_{2}(s)\right) d s} \tag{4.17}
\end{align*}
$$

so for $T^{*}<\infty, E_{2}(0)+E_{3}(0)<\infty$ and $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathfrak{E}(t)<\infty$ implies $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(E_{2}(t)+E_{3}(t)\right)<$ $\infty$. In 4.1 and 4.2 we will prove Propositions 4.3 and 4.4. We will complete the proof of Theorem 3.1 in 4.3 by showing that $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}+\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}\right)$ is controlled by $\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(E_{2}(t)+E_{3}(t)\right)$ and the initial data.

### 4.1. The proof of Proposition 4.3.

Proof. We prove Proposition 4.3 by applying the basic energy inequality, Lemma 4.1 to $D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right) \bar{z}_{t}$ of (4.12), notice that $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1} D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right) \bar{z}_{t}\right)=(I-\mathbb{H}) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}=0$. Using (B.16) ( $\overline{\mathrm{B} .15)}$ and ( $(\overline{\mathrm{B} .22})$, we expand the right hand side of (4.12):

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{2} & :=D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right)+\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \bar{z}_{t} \\
& =D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right)-2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t t} D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}+D_{\alpha} z_{t} \partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}\right)  \tag{4.18}\\
& -D_{\alpha} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}-D_{\alpha} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}-i D_{\alpha} U_{h}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

We can control $\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$ by a polynomial of $\mathfrak{E}$, see Appendix $\mathbb{C}$. What remains to be shown is that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int \frac{\left|G_{2}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a}} d \alpha \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some polynomial $C(\mathfrak{E})$. Changing to the Riemann mapping variables and using $\mathcal{A}=$ $\frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z, \alpha^{\prime}\right|^{2}}, A_{1} \geq 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int \frac{\left|G_{2}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a}} d \alpha=\int \frac{\left|G_{2}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}} h_{\alpha} d \alpha=\int \frac{\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2}\right|^{2}}{A_{1}} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq \int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

So it suffices to show that

$$
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{align*}
G_{2,0}: & =D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right) ;  \tag{4.21}\\
G_{2,1}: & =-2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t t} D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}+D_{\alpha} z_{t} \partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}\right) ; \quad \text { and }  \tag{4.22}\\
G_{2,2}:=- & D_{\alpha} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}-D_{\alpha} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \\
& -i D_{\alpha} U_{h}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}, \tag{4.23}
\end{align*}
$$

so $G_{2}=G_{2,0}+G_{2,1}+G_{2,2}$. We know by $\bar{z}_{t t}-i=-i \mathfrak{a} \bar{z}_{\alpha}$ (4.3) and $U_{h}^{-1} D_{\alpha} U_{h}=D_{\alpha^{\prime}}:=\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,0} & =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)  \tag{4.24}\\
Z_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,1} & =-2\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\left(Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right)\right) \tag{4.25}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,2}= & -\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}  \tag{4.26}\\
& -i \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\} .
\end{align*}
$$

Step 1: Quantities controlled by $E_{2}$ and a polynomial of $\mathfrak{E}$. By the definition of $E_{2}$, and the fact that $\left\|A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})$ (cf. Appendix Cl), we know

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int \frac{\left|D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a}} d \alpha, \quad \int \frac{\left|\partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \bar{z}_{t}\right|^{2}}{\mathfrak{a}} d \alpha \leq E_{2} \\
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}, \quad\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}, \quad\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.28}
\end{gather*}
$$

We commute $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}$ with $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ in the second quantity of (4.28)

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}, \bar{Z}_{t}=U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left[Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t} \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (B.26) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}-\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}, \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\right| \leq C(\mathfrak{E})\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}, \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 2. Controlling $G_{2,1}$. By (4.25), Appendix C and (4.28),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,1}\right|^{2} d \alpha \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 3. Controlling $G_{2,2}$. We expand further the terms in $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,2}$ by the product rule,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\{ \left.\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}=\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \\
&+\left\{U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\left\{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}  \tag{4.33}\\
&+\left\{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} ; \\
& \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}=\left\{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}} ; \\
& \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\}=\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \tag{4.34}
\end{align*}
$$

Step 3.1. The quantity $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)$. By equation (B.5) in Appendix B.1.

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=\frac{Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)}+\Xi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) . \tag{4.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $(I-\mathbb{H}) \Xi(\cdot, t)=0$. Differentiating with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}=\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \Xi . \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Rewrite $\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\frac{\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}$ and move $2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}$ to the left, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=-\frac{\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \Xi ; \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

differentiating (4.36) with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ and using the fact $\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}, Z_{t}}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}=2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{\partial^{2}, Z_{t}}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}-\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}, \overline{Z_{t}}}{\bar{Z}, \alpha^{\prime}}$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\alpha^{\prime}}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=2 Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \Xi . \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that $(I-\mathbb{H}) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \Xi=0, k=1,2$. Apply $(I-\mathbb{H})$ to both sides of (4.37) and (4.38), then take the real parts. Rewrite the last two terms on the right hand sides as commutators via the fact that $(I-\mathbb{H}) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \bar{Z}_{t}=0$ and $(I-\mathbb{H}) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} \frac{1}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}=0, k=1,219$ We get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\operatorname{Re}\left\{-\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} \tag{4.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} & =\operatorname{Re}\left\{2(I-\mathbb{H})\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right. \\
& \left.-\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} . \tag{4.40}
\end{align*}
$$

From (4.40), by Hölder's inequality, (A.8) and (A.12),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 3.2. The estimates for the quantities involving $\bar{Z}_{t}$. Commuting $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ with $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ and using (B.18) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} & =U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left[\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \\
& =U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t} \tag{4.42}
\end{align*}
$$

so by (4.28), (4.31) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

We estimate $\left\|Z_{t, \alpha}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$ by (A.3), Appendix C and (4.28),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq 2\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

We compute $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}$ by (B.19),

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}-U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t} & =\left[\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \bar{Z}_{t}  \tag{4.45}\\
& =2\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}
\end{align*}
$$

where by (4.41), (4.28), (4.44) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} & \lesssim\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}  \tag{4.46}\\
& \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore (4.45), (4.46), (4.31), (4.28) and Appendix C gives that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a consequence of (A.3), (4.47) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq 2\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

We compute $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}$ by commuting $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ with $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ and using (B.18),

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}+\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right] \bar{Z}_{t}=\bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}-\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} ; \tag{4.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

(4.48), (4.44) and Appendix C imply that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^7]Step 3.3. The estimate for the terms involving $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)$ in (4.33) and (4.34). By Steps 3.1 and 3.2, we can give the estimates for some of the terms in (4.33) and (4.34). First, because $\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})$ (cf. Appendix C) and (4.43),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} ; \tag{4.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

and from (4.47),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

From (4.41), (4.28), (4.44), (4.48) and Appendix C,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} & \lesssim\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.53}
\end{align*}
$$

additionally from (4.49),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left(\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+C(\mathfrak{E})\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right)\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& \quad+\left(\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+C(\mathfrak{E})\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right)\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} . \tag{4.54}
\end{align*}
$$

Step 3.4. The terms involving $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{k} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}, k=0,1$. We first consider $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ\right.$ $\left.h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$. Applying $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ to (4.39) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} & =2 \operatorname{Re} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \\
& +\operatorname{Re}\left\{-U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}+U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} \tag{4.55}
\end{align*}
$$

we know

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} \frac{z_{t \alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}=\frac{Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)^{2}=D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}-\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)^{2} \tag{4.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

We compute the last two terms on the RHS of (4.55) by (B.25),

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} & =\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}  \tag{4.57}\\
& +\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right)-\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, h_{t} \circ h^{-1} ; \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right]
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} & =\left[Z_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}  \tag{4.58}\\
& +\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)-\left[Z_{t}, h_{t} \circ h^{-1} ; \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right]
\end{align*}
$$

Now by the product rule,

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} & =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)\right\}  \tag{4.59}\\
& =\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)+\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

commuting $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ with $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ and using (B.18) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} & =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right] \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}  \tag{4.60}\\
& =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}
\end{align*}
$$

Applying Appendix Cyields

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) \tag{4.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

and from (4.55), by (4.56), (4.57), (4.58), (4.61) and (A.18), A.17) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) . \tag{4.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

We analyze $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ similarly. Commuting $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ with $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ and using (B.18) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} & =\left[\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right]\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}+U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \\
& =\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}+U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} . \tag{4.63}
\end{align*}
$$

We compute the second term on the RHS of (4.63) via (4.40):

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} & -2 \operatorname{Re} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\operatorname{Re}\left\{2 U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right. \\
& \left.-U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} \tag{4.64}
\end{align*}
$$

commuting $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ with $\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}:=D_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ and using (B.12) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} & =D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right] Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \\
& =\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}-\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right) \tag{4.65}
\end{align*}
$$

for the first term on the RHS of (4.64), we commute $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ with $(I-\mathbb{H})$ and use (B.23),

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \\
& \quad-\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)  \tag{4.66}\\
& \quad=(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)-\left[h_{t} \circ h^{-1}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

we use product rule to expand further the terms on the RHS of (4.66). By (4.50), (4.61), (4.44), Appendix C and (A.11),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.67}
\end{equation*}
$$

We use (B.25) to compute the last two terms on the RHS of (4.64), then use (A.11), (A.12) and (4.61), (4.50), (4.44), (4.48) and Appendix C to do the estimates, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{\alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}+\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now conclude the estimates for the two terms involving $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ in (4.33). By (4.63), (4.41), (4.44), (4.69) and (4.28) and Appendix C],

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left\{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.70}
\end{equation*}
$$

by (4.62) and (4.28),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left\{U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally we estimate the $L^{2}$ norms of the two terms on the RHS of the second equation in (4.34).

Step 3.5. The $L^{2}$ norm of $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right)$. We begin with the first equation of (2.9) $\mathcal{A}:=$ $\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{i Z, \alpha^{\prime}}$. Differentiating with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathcal{A}=-i D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}-i\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \tag{4.72}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathcal{A}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) \tag{4.73}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore by (4.28),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.74}
\end{equation*}
$$

We now consider the term $\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}$ in (4.34). We calculate $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}$ by differentiating the equation $i \mathcal{A}=\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}(\sqrt{2.9)}$ twice:

$$
\begin{equation*}
i \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}=\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} . \tag{4.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying $(I-\mathbb{H})$ then taking the imaginary parts gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}=\operatorname{Im}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+2 \operatorname{Im}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+\operatorname{Im}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \tag{4.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

we rewrite the first term on the right by commuting out $\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right)+\left[\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right) ; \tag{4.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

using $(I-\mathbb{H}) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=0$ we rewrite the third term on the right of (4.76) as a commutator

$$
\begin{equation*}
(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=\left[Z_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \tag{4.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}= & \operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right. \\
& \left.(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right)+\left[\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right)\right\}  \tag{4.79}\\
& +\operatorname{Im}\left\{2(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+\left[Z_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

We apply (A.11), A.12) and Hölder. This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}-\operatorname{Im}\left\{\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right)\right\}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{4.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}\right) \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{4.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (4.28), (4.44), (4.48) and Appendix C,

$$
\left\|\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \mathcal{A}\right) \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}
$$

This completes the proof for

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,2}\right|^{2} d \alpha \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.82}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 4. Controlling $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,0}\right\|_{L^{2}}$. We are left with controlling $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2,0}\right\|_{L^{2}}$. By (4.24), we must show

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.83}
\end{equation*}
$$

We expand $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)$ by the product rule

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)=\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}+2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \tag{4.84}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we estimate the $L^{2}$ norm of $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)$ by (4.6), (A.8), (A.11), (A.12) and (A.9)

$$
\begin{align*}
\| \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}}{t} \mathfrak{a}\right. & \left.h^{-1}\right) \|_{L^{2}} \lesssim \\
& \left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}  \tag{4.85}\\
& +\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}
\end{align*}
$$

so by Appendix C (4.28) and (4.44), (4.48),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}+2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.86}
\end{equation*}
$$

What remains is the term $\int\left|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime}$. We begin with (4.12), together with (4.18) and (4.21), (4.22), (4.23):

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right) \bar{z}_{t}=D_{\alpha} \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right)+G_{2,1}+G_{2,2} \tag{4.87}
\end{equation*}
$$

Precomposing with $h^{-1}$ then multiply $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}$ gives, using $\bar{z}_{t t}-i=-i \mathfrak{a} \bar{z}_{\alpha}$ (4.3),

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right) \bar{z}_{t}=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left(G_{2,1}+G_{2,2}\right) \tag{4.88}
\end{equation*}
$$

By commuting $\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)$ with $\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}$ we rewrite the left hand side as

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t} \tag{4.89}
\end{equation*}
$$

(4.88) now yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}}{t} \mathfrak{a} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)+e \tag{4.90}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
e: & =-Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left(G_{2,1}+G_{2,2}\right)  \tag{4.91}\\
& +\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}+2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}} .
\end{align*}
$$

Observe $(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}=(I-\mathbb{H}) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}=0$. We want to use the "almost holomorphicity" of the LHS of (4.90) and the fact that $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)$ is real valued to estimate $\left.\int \left\lvert\, \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right.\right)\left.\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right|^{2} d \alpha$. We first show that the error term $e$ is well behaved. By (B.29),

$$
\begin{align*}
& Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}=2\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right) U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t} \\
& +\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)^{2} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}  \tag{4.92}\\
& +\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}
\end{align*}
$$

from (B.12), $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}=D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}-\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)^{2}$, therefore by Appendix C] (4.28), (4.31) and (4.62),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.93}
\end{equation*}
$$

The estimates (4.93), (4.86), (4.82) and (4.32) give that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int|e|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} \tag{4.94}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we apply $(I-\mathbb{H})$ to both sides of (4.90), then rewrite $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)$ by commuting out $\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right) & =\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)  \tag{4.95}\\
& +\left[\bar{Z}_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)+(I-\mathbb{H}) e
\end{align*}
$$

Since $\mathbb{H}$ is purely imaginary, $\left|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right| \leq\left|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)\right|$ hence

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq\left\|\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}}{\mathfrak{a}}{ }_{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& \lesssim\left\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\left[\bar{Z}_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\|e\|_{L^{2}} . \tag{4.96}
\end{align*}
$$

By (A.12) and (4.85), (4.48), (4.44) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left[\bar{Z}_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.97}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}+C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.98}
\end{equation*}
$$

In what follows we will show that

$$
\left\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2}
$$

and complete the proof for Proposition 4.3
Step 4.1. Controlling $\left\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}$. We introduce the following notations. We write $f_{1} \equiv f_{2}$, if $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(f_{1}-f_{2}\right)=0$. We define $\mathbb{P}_{H}:=\frac{(I+\mathbb{H})}{2}$ and $\mathbb{P}_{A}:=\frac{(I-\mathbb{H})}{2}$, so $\mathbb{P}_{H}+\mathbb{P}_{A}=I$, and $\mathbb{P}_{H}-\mathbb{P}_{A}=\mathbb{H}$. By Proposition A.1 $\mathbb{P}_{H}$ is the projection onto the space of holomorphic functions in the lower half plane $P_{-}$, and $\mathbb{P}_{A}$ is the projection onto the space of anti-holomorphic functions in $P_{-}$.

We want to derive an estimate of $\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h \|_{L^{2}}\right.$ for a generic $U$ satisfying $U=\mathbb{H} U$, i.e. $U \equiv 0$. Observe $D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \equiv 0$. By (B.8) of Proposition B. 1 satisfies

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h & \equiv 2 \frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U  \tag{4.99}\\
& +Z_{t}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U+2\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
\end{align*}
$$

What we will do first is to use (4.99) to rewrite $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h\right.$ into a favorable form so that desired estimate will follow.

We expand on the RHS of (4.99) the term

$$
Z_{t}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U=\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)^{2} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U+\frac{Z_{t}^{2}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
$$

by the product rule, and decompose $\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)$. We have, because $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U \equiv 0$ by (B.6),

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h & \equiv 2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}+\mathbb{P}_{H}\right)\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U \\
& +\left(\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}+\mathbb{P}_{H}\right)\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U  \tag{4.100}\\
& +\frac{Z_{t}^{2}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+2\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
\end{align*}
$$

We expand further the factor $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right)$ on the RHS by the product rule. After cancelation we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h \equiv 2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U \\
& -2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\left\{\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+  \tag{4.101}\\
& \left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U+\frac{Z_{t}^{2}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+2\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
\end{align*}
$$

Now because $\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)$ and $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U$ are holomorphic,

$$
2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \equiv 2 \frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
$$

moreover

$$
\begin{aligned}
&-2 \frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+\frac{Z_{t}^{2}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) ; \\
&-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U=-Z_{t} \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} U\right) \\
&+Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) U
\end{aligned}
$$

and by straightforward expansion,

$$
\left[Z_{t},\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \equiv-2 Z_{t} \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)
$$

and

$$
Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \mathbb{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=\left\{\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)\right\}^{2}-\left\{\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)\right\}^{2}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h \equiv 2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U \\
& -2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U \\
& +\frac{1}{2}\left\{\left[Z_{t},\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} U\right)-\left\{\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)\right\}^{2} U  \tag{4.102}\\
& +2 \frac{\left(Z_{t t}+i\right)}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U
\end{align*}
$$

We further rewrite

$$
2 \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \equiv \mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right)
$$

Apply $(I-\mathbb{H})$ to both sides of (4.102) , and rewrite terms of the form $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(g_{1} g_{2}\right)$ with $g_{2}=\mathbb{H} g_{2}$ as $\left[g_{1}, \mathbb{H}\right] g_{2}$. We obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& (I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h=2\left[\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right), \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}-\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U \\
& -(I-\mathbb{H})\left\{\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\left[\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right), \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right\}+\left[\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U \\
& +\left[\frac{1}{2}\left[Z_{t},\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} U\right)  \tag{4.103}\\
& -(I-\mathbb{H})\left\{\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2} U\right\}+2\left[\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U .
\end{align*}
$$

We further use the identity 20

$$
-2\left[g_{1}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(g_{1} g_{2}\right)+\left[g_{1}^{2}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g_{2}=-\frac{1}{\pi i} \int\left(\frac{g_{1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}\right)-g_{1}\left(\beta^{\prime}\right)}{\alpha^{\prime}-\beta^{\prime}}\right)^{2} g_{2}\left(\beta^{\prime}\right) d \beta^{\prime}:=-\left[g_{1}, g_{1} ; g_{2}\right]
$$

to rewrite the sum of second part of the first and the third terms on the right:

$$
\begin{align*}
& -2\left[\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right), \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right)+\left[\left(\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)^{2}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U \\
& \quad=-\left[\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right), \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) ; \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right] \tag{4.104}
\end{align*}
$$

We are now ready to give the estimate for $(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h$. We have, by (A.11), (A.15) and Hölder's inequality,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} U\right\|_{L^{2}}+ \\
& \left\|\mathbb{P}_{H}\left(\frac{Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|U\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathbb{P}_{A}\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2}\|U\|_{L^{2}}  \tag{4.105}\\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\left[Z_{t},\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} U\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \\
& +\left\|\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2}\|U\|_{L^{2}}++\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|U\|_{L^{2}} .
\end{align*}
$$

Now by (A.19),

$$
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\left[Z_{t},\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right]\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}
$$

and because

$$
\begin{gathered}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}+\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \\
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{Z_{t t}+i}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} .
\end{gathered}
$$

We can conclude now by Appendix $\mathbb{C}$ that for any $U$ satisfying $U=\mathbb{H} U$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U \circ h\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})\left(\|U\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} U\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} U\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}\right) \tag{4.106}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a consequence of (4.106) and (4.28), (4.31),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right)\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.107}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^8](4.98) then gives
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2} . \tag{4.108}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Sum up (4.82), (4.32), (4.86) and (4.108),

$$
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{2}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}
$$

This finishes the proof of Proposition 4.3.

### 4.2. The proof of Proposition 4.4.

Proof. We prove Proposition 4.4 by applying Lemma 4.1 to (4.12) for $k=3$, notice that $(I-\mathbb{H}) U_{h}^{-1} D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t}=(I-\mathbb{H}) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}=0$. For $k=3$, the right hand side of (4.12) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
G_{3}:=D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2}\left(-i \mathfrak{a}_{t} \bar{z}_{\alpha}\right)+\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2}\right] \bar{z}_{t} \tag{4.109}
\end{equation*}
$$

Similar to the proof for Proposition 4.3, we only need to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3} \tag{4.110}
\end{equation*}
$$

We expand $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3}$ by (B.16), (B.15), (B.22). We have

$$
\begin{align*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3} & =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right)+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t} \\
& +\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \frac{\partial_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}}{h_{\alpha}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \bar{z}_{t}  \tag{4.111}\\
& :=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,0}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,1}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,2}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,3}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gather*}
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,0}:=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right) \\
=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)+3 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}  \tag{4.112}\\
+3 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}+\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t} ; \\
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,1}:=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2} \bar{z}_{t} \\
=-2 D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}-2\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right) Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t} ;  \tag{4.113}\\
Z_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,2}:=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \frac{\partial_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}}{h_{\alpha}} \\
=-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} \partial_{t} U_{h} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\} \\
-i \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\} \\
=-\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}-\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}  \tag{4.114}\\
-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right) \\
-\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right) \\
-i\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}-i \mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t} ;
\end{gather*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,3}:=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \bar{z}_{t} \\
& \quad=-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\}  \tag{4.115}\\
& \quad-i \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

Step 1. Quantities controlled by $E_{3}$ and a polynomial of $\mathfrak{E}$ and $E_{2}$. By the definition of $E_{3}$, and the fact that $\left\|A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})$ (cf. Appendix C),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}, \quad\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}, \quad\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3} \tag{4.116}
\end{equation*}
$$

We commute $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}$ with $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}$ of the second quantity in (4.116):

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}-\left[Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t} \tag{4.117}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (B.26) and Appendix C we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}-\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\right| \leq C(\mathfrak{E})\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{4.118}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3} \tag{4.119}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (B.18),

$$
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}-U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}=\left[\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}=\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3} \tag{4.120}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a consequence of (A.3), (4.28), (4.116), (4.31) and (4.120),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}, \quad\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.121}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (B.18) again,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t} & -\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t} \\
& =\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}
\end{aligned}
$$

so by (4.120), (4.116), and (4.41), (4.121), (4.28), (4.44) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.122}
\end{equation*}
$$

and consequently by (A.3) and (4.43),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.123}
\end{equation*}
$$

eq:215
Step 2. Controlling $G_{3,1}$. By (4.113), Appendix C and (4.116),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,1}\right|^{2} d \alpha \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3} . \tag{4.124}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 3. Controlling $G_{3,2}$. By (4.63), (4.69), (4.41), (4.65), (4.43), (4.28), (4.121), (4.62), (4.116), (4.123), (4.120), (4.122), (4.73), (4.80), (4.48) and Appendix C we can control each of the terms in (4.114). Sum up, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,2}\right|^{2} d \alpha \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.125}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 4. Controlling $G_{3,3}$. Expanding $G_{3,3}$ in 4.115) by the product rule, we find that the additional types of terms that have not already appeared in (4.114) and controlled in the previous step are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}, \quad\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}, \\
& \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\}, \quad \text { and } \quad\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \mathcal{A}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}
\end{aligned}
$$

Step 4.1. Controlling $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ and $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t t}$. We begin with controlling $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}, \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} A_{1}$ and $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}$. Differentiating (2.19) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}=-\operatorname{Im}\left[Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}-\operatorname{Im}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} \tag{4.126}
\end{equation*}
$$

so by (A.18), Appendix C and (4.28),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{2}^{1 / 2} \tag{4.127}
\end{equation*}
$$

Differentiating again with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ then apply (A.11), A.13) and (A.3) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.128}
\end{equation*}
$$

To estimate $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}$ we begin with (2.10):

$$
-i \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\frac{\bar{Z}_{t t}-i}{A_{1}}
$$

Taking two derivatives with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
-i \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}}{A_{1}}-2 \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}} \frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}}{A_{1}^{2}}+\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\left(-\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} A_{1}}{A_{1}^{2}}+2 \frac{\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right)^{2}}{A_{1}^{3}}\right) \tag{4.129}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim & \left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& +\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right) \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.130}
\end{align*}
$$

and consequently by (A.3),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.131}
\end{equation*}
$$

We are now ready to give the estimates for $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}$ and $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}$. Rewriting the first term on the right of (4.40) as a commutator then differentiating yields,

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} & -2 \operatorname{Re}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=\operatorname{Re}\left\{2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \\
& \left.-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\} . \tag{4.132}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the right hand side of (4.132) by the product rule. By (A.11), A.12),

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} & \lesssim\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}  \tag{4.133}\\
& +\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

For $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}$, we differentiate (4.45) with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t} & =3 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+2\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t} \\
& +\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t} \tag{4.134}
\end{align*}
$$

therefore by (4.41), 4.116), 4.120), 4.121),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.135}
\end{equation*}
$$

and as a consequence of (A.3),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.136}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 4.2. Controlling $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \mathcal{A}$. We differentiate (4.79) with respect to $\alpha^{\prime}$ and use the product rule to expand. We have,

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \mathcal{A}\right\|_{L^{2}} & \leq\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.137}
\end{align*}
$$

Step 4.3. Controlling $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$. By (B.16) and (B.18),

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} & =U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \\
& +\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right)^{2}+2\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \tag{4.138}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right)^{2}+2\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& \lesssim\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& \lesssim\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{3 / 2}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{1 / 2}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) . \tag{4.139}
\end{align*}
$$

For $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}$, we differentiate (4.132) and use the product rule and (B.25) to expand the derivatives,

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-2 \operatorname{Re}\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)+U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\right)  \tag{4.140}\\
& \left.=\operatorname{Re} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[\frac{1}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

we then use (A.11), (A.12), (A.13), A.16) and Hölder's inequality to do the estimates. We have

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\right)  \tag{4.141}\\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}
\end{align*}
$$

Now by (B.18), (B.16),

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-2\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \tag{4.142}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{gather*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)  \tag{4.143}\\
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}=\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\left(\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)  \tag{4.144}\\
+2\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)+\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

we further expand

$$
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}
$$

and

$$
\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t}+2 \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}
$$

Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}), \quad\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.145}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (4.141),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 2}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.146}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 4.4. Conclusion for $G_{3,3}$. We expand $G_{3,3}$ by product rules. Sum up the estimates in Steps 4.1-4.3, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,3}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.147}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 5. Controlling $G_{3,0}$. We estimate $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} G_{3,0}\right\|_{L^{2}}$ using similar ideas as that in Step 4 for Proposition 4.3. By (4.112), we must control $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a} t}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}, \| \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a} t}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ\right.$ $\left.h^{-1}\right) \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\left\|_{L^{2}},\right\| \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t} \|_{L^{2}}$ and $\left\|\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}$. First by (4.135) and Appendix C

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) . \tag{4.148}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (4.85) and (A.3),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) . \tag{4.149}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (4.6),

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} & \lesssim\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left(\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|\mathbb{H} Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right)+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& +\left(\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right)\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& +\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \\
& +\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} A_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{4.150}
\end{align*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}^{1 / 4}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.151}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) . \tag{4.152}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now similar to (4.92) and (4.93), we compute $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{3} \bar{z}_{t}$ by (B.28) and have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1}\left[\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right), \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right]\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{3} \bar{z}_{t}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3} \tag{4.153}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now we begining with (4.12) for $k=3$. After expansion, commuting and precomposing with $h^{-1}$, and using the above estimates, we arrive at

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}\right) U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}=\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)+e_{1} \tag{4.154}
\end{equation*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|e_{1}\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) \tag{4.155}
\end{equation*}
$$

Going through similar calculations as in (4.95) to (4.98), then applying (4.106) to $U=\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3}\left(\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) E_{3}+C\left(\mathfrak{E}, E_{2}\right) . \tag{4.156}
\end{equation*}
$$

This finishes the proof for Proposition 4.4.

## complete1

### 4.3. Completing the proof for Theorem 3.1.

Proof. Let $s \geq 4$. Let the initial interface $Z(\cdot, 0)=Z(0)$, the initial velocity $Z_{t}(\cdot, 0)=Z_{t}(0)$ be given and satisfy (2.8) and $\bar{Z}_{t}(0)=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t}(0)$; let $A_{1}(0)$ satisfy (2.19) and the initial acceleration $Z_{t t}(0)$ satisfy (2.10). Assume $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)-1 \in L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R}), Z_{t}(0) \in H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R})$, and $Z_{t t}(0) \in H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$. It is clear that $E_{2}(0)+E_{3}(0)<\infty$. Assume $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$, for $t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)$ is a solution of (2.9)-(2.8), such that $\left(Z_{t}, Z_{t t}, Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1\right) \in C\left(\left[0, T^{*}\right), H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s}(\mathbb{R})\right)$, and $T^{*}$ is the maximum existence time as defined in Theorem 3.1. Assume $T^{*}<\infty$, for otherwise we are done; and assume $\sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)} \mathfrak{E}(t):=M<\infty$. We want to show $\sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}+\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}\right)<\infty$.

Step 1. Controlling $\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}$ and $\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}$ by $\mathfrak{E}$ and the initial data. We start with $\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}$. By a change of the variables,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}=\frac{d}{d t} \int\left|z_{t t}\right|^{2} h_{\alpha} d \alpha=2 \operatorname{Re} \int z_{t t} \bar{z}_{t t t} h_{\alpha} d \alpha+2 \int\left|z_{t t}\right|^{2} \frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} h_{\alpha} d \alpha \tag{4.157}
\end{equation*}
$$

we estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int\left|z_{t t}\right|^{2} \frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} h_{\alpha} d \alpha \leq\left\|\frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \tag{4.158}
\end{equation*}
$$

Switching back to the Riemann mapping variable and using (4.5) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \int z_{t t} \bar{z}_{t t t} h_{\alpha} d \alpha=\int Z_{t t} \bar{Z}_{t t t} d \alpha^{\prime}  \tag{4.159}\\
& \quad=-i \int Z_{t t} \mathcal{A} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}} d \alpha^{\prime}+\int Z_{t t} \frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}-i\right) d \alpha^{\prime}=I+I I
\end{align*}
$$

Sum up the above estimates and apply Appendix C, we arrive at

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq c(\mathfrak{E}(t))\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}+c(\mathfrak{E}(t))
$$

Consequently by Gronwall,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c\left(\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{L^{2}}, M\right)<\infty \tag{4.163}
\end{equation*}
$$

Changing to the Lagrangian coordinate, we have

$$
\int\left|Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)\right|^{2} d \alpha^{\prime}=\int\left|z_{t}(\alpha, t)\right|^{2} h_{\alpha}(\alpha, t) d \alpha
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} \int\left|z_{t}\right|^{2} h_{\alpha} d \alpha=2 \operatorname{Re} \int z_{t} \bar{z}_{t t} h_{\alpha} d \alpha+\int\left|z_{t}\right|^{2} h_{\alpha} \frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} d \alpha \tag{4.164}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using Cauchy-Schwarz and changing back to the Riemann mapping variable,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t} \int\left|z_{t}\right|^{2} h_{\alpha} d \alpha \leq 2\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \tag{4.165}
\end{equation*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}(t))\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2}+\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \tag{4.166}
\end{equation*}
$$

by Appendix C. Consequently by Gronwall's inequality and (4.163),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \leq C\left(\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{L^{2}}, M\right)<\infty \tag{4.167}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 2. Controlling $\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$. We know

$$
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} \circ h=\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}
$$

and

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left|\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right|^{2}=2\left|\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right|^{2} \operatorname{Re}\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}-\frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)
$$

so by Appendix C

$$
\frac{d}{d t}\left|\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right|^{2} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})\left|\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right|^{2}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} e^{C(M) T^{*}}<\infty \tag{4.168}
\end{equation*}
$$

Step 3. Controlling $\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}+\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}}$. Taking sup over [0, $\left.T^{*}\right)$ on 4.17) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)} E_{2}(t) \leq E_{2}(0) e^{p_{1}(M) T^{*}}:=M_{2}<\infty \\
& \sup _{t \in\left[0, T^{*}\right)} E_{3}(t) \leq\left(E_{3}(0)+p_{3}\left(M, M_{2}\right) T^{*}\right) e^{p_{2}\left(M, M_{2}\right) T^{*}}:=M_{3}<\infty \tag{4.169}
\end{align*}
$$

By (4.135), (4.163),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3}} \lesssim \sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left(\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|Z_{t t}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\right)<\infty \tag{4.170}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now by (A.6),

$$
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}+\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}\right)
$$

We know by (4.116) and Appendix C.

$$
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}}, \quad\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E}) E_{3}, \quad\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C(\mathfrak{E})
$$

so using (4.168) we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{3} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \leq\left\|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} e^{C(M) T^{*}} C(M) M_{3}<\infty \tag{4.171}
\end{equation*}
$$

Combine with (4.167), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T^{*}\right)}\left\|Z_{t}(t)\right\|_{H^{3+1 / 2}}<\infty \tag{4.172}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Proposition 2.3 this brings us a contradiction. This finishes the proof for Theorem 3.1.

## 5. The proof of Theorem 3.4

We prove Theorem 3.4 by mollifying the initial data by the Poisson Kernel and approximating. We denote $z^{\prime}=x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}$, where $x^{\prime}, y^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R} . f * g$ is the convolution in the spatial variable.
5.1. The initial data. Let $F\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)$ be the initial fluid velocity in the Riemann mapping coordinate, $\Psi\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right): P_{-} \rightarrow \Omega(0)$ be the Riemann mapping as given in 3.1 with $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)=$ $\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$ the initial interface. We note that by the assumption

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)}\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)<\infty, \quad \sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq c_{0}<\infty ; \\
& \sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)<\infty, \quad \sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq c_{0}<\infty,
\end{aligned}
$$

$\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}(\cdot, 0), F(\cdot, 0)$ can be extended continuously onto $\bar{P}_{-}$. We denote their boundary values by $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$ and $F\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$. So $Z(\cdot, 0)=\Psi(\cdot, 0)$ is continuous differentiable on the open set where $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right) \neq 0$, and $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)=\frac{1}{Z_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)}$ where $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right) \neq 0$. By $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}(\cdot, 0)-1 \in$ $H^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ and Sobolev embedding, there is $N>0$ sufficiently large, such that for $\left|\alpha^{\prime}\right| \geq N$, $\left|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)-1\right| \leq 1 / 2$, so $Z=Z(\cdot, 0)$ is continuous differentiable on $(-\infty,-N) \cup(N, \infty)$, with $\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)\right| \leq 2$, for all $\left|\alpha^{\prime}\right| \geq N$. Moreover, $Z_{,^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)-1 \in H^{1}\{(-\infty,-N) \cup(N, \infty)\}$.
5.2. The mollified data and the approximate solutions. Let $\epsilon>0$. We take

$$
\begin{gather*}
Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right), \quad \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)=F\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right), \quad h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)=\alpha, \\
F^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=F\left(z^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right), \quad \Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=\Psi\left(z^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right) . \tag{5.1}
\end{gather*}
$$

Notice that $F^{\epsilon}(\cdot, 0), \Psi^{\epsilon}(\cdot, 0)$ are holomorphic on $P_{-}, Z^{\epsilon}(0)$ satisfies (2.8) and $\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}(0)=$ $\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}(0)$. Let $Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(0)$ be given by (2.10). It is clear $Z^{\epsilon}(0), Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(0)$ and $Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(0)$ satisfy the assumption of Theorem 3.1 Let $Z^{\epsilon}(t):=Z^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t)$ be the solution as given by Theorem 3.1 with the homeomorphism $h^{\epsilon}(t)=h^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$, and $z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)=Z^{\epsilon}\left(h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t), t\right)$. We know $z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)=Z_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t), t\right)$. Let

$$
F^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \Psi^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t)
$$

be the holomorphic functions on $P_{-}$with boundary values $\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}(t), Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)$ and $Z^{\epsilon}(t)$;

$$
\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)
$$

by uniqueness ${ }^{21}$ We denote the energy functional $\mathcal{E}$ for $Z^{\epsilon}(t), \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)$ by $\mathcal{E}^{\epsilon}(t)$ and the energy functional $\mathcal{E}_{1}$ for $F^{\epsilon}(t), \Psi^{\epsilon}(t)$ by $\mathcal{E}_{1}^{\epsilon}(t)$. It is clear $\mathcal{E}^{\epsilon}(0)=\mathcal{E}_{1}^{\epsilon}(0) \leq \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$. By Theorem 3.1] Theorem 2.4 and Proposition [2.5 there exists $T_{0}>0, T_{0}$ depends only on $\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$, such that

[^9]on $\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, the system (2.9)-(2.8)-(2.18)-(2.19) has a unique solution $Z^{\epsilon}=Z^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t)$, satisfying $\left(Z_{t}^{\epsilon}, Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}, \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}-1\right) \in C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s}(\mathbb{R})\right)$ for $s>4$, and
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \mathcal{E}_{1}^{\epsilon}(t)=\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \mathcal{E}^{\epsilon}(t) \leq M\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)<\infty \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Moreover by (2.10), (4.163) and (4.167),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left(\left\|Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}}\right) \leq c\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

so there is a constant $C_{0}:=C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)>0$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\{\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}\right\}<C_{0}<\infty \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

5.3. Uniformly bounded quantities. We would like to apply some compactness results to pass to the limits of the various quantities for the water waves. It is necessary to understand the boundedness properties of these quantities.

Let $b^{\epsilon}:=h_{t}^{\epsilon} \circ\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}=2 \operatorname{Re} Z_{t}^{\epsilon}+\operatorname{Re}\left[Z_{t}^{\epsilon}, \mathbb{H}\right]\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}-1\right)$ be as given by (2.18). By (A.18),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}=\left\|h_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)-1\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (4.2) to rewrite $b^{\epsilon}=\operatorname{Re}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(Z_{t}^{\epsilon} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\right)$, differentiating to get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

We know $h^{\epsilon}$ satisfies

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t} h^{\epsilon}=b^{\epsilon}\left(h^{\epsilon}, t\right)  \tag{5.7}\\
h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)=\alpha
\end{array}\right.
$$

Differentiating (5.7) gives

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{d}{d t} h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}=b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(h^{\epsilon}, t\right) h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}  \tag{5.8}\\
h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)=1
\end{array}\right.
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{-t \sup _{[0, t]}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(s)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}} \leq h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)=e^{\int_{0}^{t} b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(h^{\epsilon}, s\right) d s} \leq e^{t \sup _{[0, t]}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(s)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}} \tag{5.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now by (2.18), (B.24), with an application of (A.18) and (A.17),

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \lesssim\left\|Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)-1\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& +\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\left(\left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)-1\right\|_{L^{2}}\right) \tag{5.10}
\end{align*}
$$

where $U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}=\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\left(\left(h_{t}^{\epsilon} \circ\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}^{\epsilon}\right)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}\right) \\
& \left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right) \tag{5.11}
\end{align*}
$$

and $U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}}=\partial_{t}+b^{\epsilon} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{t} b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, differentiating (4.3) gives $z_{t t t}^{\epsilon}=\left(z_{t t}^{\epsilon}+i\right)\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon}+\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}^{\epsilon}}{\mathfrak{a}^{\epsilon}}\right)$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|z_{t t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq\left\|z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)+i\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\left\|D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}^{\epsilon}}{\mathfrak{a}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\right) \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $M\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), c\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), C_{0}$ be the bounds in (5.2), (5.3) and (5.4). By Proposition 2.5) Sobolev embedding, Appendix C and (5.11), the following quantities are uniformly bounded with bounds depending only on $M\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), c\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), C_{0}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|Z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}, \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}, \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}, \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|Z_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}, \\
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}, \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\right)(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}, \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|U_{h^{\epsilon}}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h^{\epsilon}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} ; \tag{5.14}
\end{align*}
$$

and with a change of the variables and (5.9), (5.13) and Appendix C,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), \\
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\frac{h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}{z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\partial_{\alpha}\left(\frac{h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}{z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}\right)(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\partial_{t} \frac{h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}{z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right),  \tag{5.15}\\
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|z_{t t t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Furthermore, by the estimates in (5.5) (5.12), using (5.3) (5.14) and Appendix C the following quantities are uniformly bounded:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|b^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|b_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|b_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \\
& \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|h_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

In particular, by (5.9) and Appendix $\mathbb{C}$ there are $c_{1}, c_{2}>0$, depending only on $c_{0}$ and $\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<c_{1} \leq \frac{h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)-h^{\epsilon}(\beta, t)}{\alpha-\beta} \leq c_{2}<\infty, \quad \forall \alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$ will use to pass to the limits.

lemma1 Lemma 5.1. Let $\left\{f_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence of smooth functions on $\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]$. Let $1<p \leq \infty$. Assume that there is a constant $C$, independent of $n$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{[0, T]}\left\|f_{n}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}+\sup _{[0, T]}\left\|\partial_{x} f_{n}(t)\right\|_{L^{p}}+\sup _{[0, T]}\left\|\partial_{t} f_{n}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then there is a function $f$, continuous and bounded on $\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]$, and a subsequence $\left\{f_{n_{j}}\right\}$, such that $f_{n_{j}} \rightarrow f$ uniformly on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]$.

Lemma 5.1 is an easy consequence of Arzela-Ascoli Theorem, we omit the proof.
lemma2 Lemma 5.2. Assume that $f_{n} \rightarrow f$ uniformly on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R} \times[0, T]$, and assume there is a constant $C$, such that $\sup _{n}\left\|f_{n}\right\|_{L^{\infty}(\mathbb{R} \times[0, T])} \leq C$. Then $K_{y^{\prime}} * f_{n}$ converges uniformly to $K_{y^{\prime}} * f$ on compact subsets of $\bar{P}_{-} \times[0, T]$.

The proof follows easily by considering the convolution on two sets $\left|x^{\prime}\right|<N$, and $\left|x^{\prime}\right| \geq N$. We omit the proof.
Definition 5.3. We write

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{n} \Rightarrow f \quad \text { on } E \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

5.4. Some useful compactness results. Here we give two compactness results that we
$f_{n} \Rightarrow f \quad$ on $E$
unif-notation
if $f_{n}$ converge uniformly to $f$ on compact subsets of $E$.
5.5. Passing to the limit. Notice that $h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)-\alpha=\int_{0}^{t} h_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, s) d s$, so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left|h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)-\alpha\right| \leq T_{0} \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|h_{t}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq T_{0} C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)<\infty \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 5.1, there is a subsequence $\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$, which we still write as $\epsilon$ instead of $\epsilon_{j}$, and functions $b, h-\alpha, w, u, q:=w_{t}$, continuous and bounded on $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
b^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow b, \quad h^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow h, \quad z_{t}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow w, \quad \frac{h_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}}{z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}} \Rightarrow u, \quad z_{t t}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow q, \quad \text { on } \mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Moreover by (5.17),

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<c_{1} \leq \frac{h(\alpha, t)-h(\beta, t)}{\alpha-\beta} \leq c_{2}<\infty, \quad \forall \alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{R}, t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $h(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ is a homeomorphism, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1} \Rightarrow h^{-1} \quad \text { on } \mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right], \quad \text { as } \epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow w \circ h^{-1}, \quad \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}} \Rightarrow u \circ h^{-1}, \quad \bar{Z}_{t t}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow w_{t} \circ h^{-1}, \quad \text { on } \mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Now

$$
\begin{equation*}
F^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}, \quad \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}} \tag{5.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $F\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(w \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right), \Lambda\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(u \circ h^{-1}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)$. By Lemma 5.2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
F^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow F\left(z^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow \Lambda\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \quad \text { on } \bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Moreover $F(\cdot, t), \Lambda(\cdot, t)$ are holomorphic on $P_{-}$for each $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, and continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times[0, T]$. Furthermore applying the Cauchy integral formula to the first limit in (5.26) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow F_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \quad \text { on } P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] . \tag{5.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$.
step4.1
Step 1. The limit of $\Psi^{\epsilon}$. We consider the limit of $\Psi^{\epsilon}$, as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. We know

$$
\begin{align*}
z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t) & =z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)+\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, s) d s  \tag{5.28}\\
& =\Psi(\alpha-\epsilon i, 0)+\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, s) d s
\end{align*}
$$

therefore

$$
\begin{align*}
Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right) & =\Psi\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-\epsilon i, 0\right)-\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right) \\
& +\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), s\right) d s \tag{5.29}
\end{align*}
$$

Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
W^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\Psi\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-\epsilon i, 0\right)-\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right)+\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), s\right) d s \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Observe $Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$ is the boundary value of the holomorphic function $\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)-$ $\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)$. By (5.21) and (5.23), $\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), s\right) d s \rightarrow \int_{0}^{t} w\left(h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), s\right) d s$ uniformly on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, and by (5.15), $\int_{0}^{t} z_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), s\right) d s$ is continuous and uniformly bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]\right)$. By the assumptions $\lim _{z^{\prime} \rightarrow 0} \Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=1, \Psi(\cdot, 0)$ is continuous on $\bar{P}_{-}$and (5.20), (5.23),

$$
\Psi\left(\left(h^{\epsilon}\right)^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-\epsilon i, 0\right)-\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\epsilon i, 0\right)
$$

is continuous and uniformly bounded in $L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]\right)$ for $0<\epsilon<1$, and converges uniformly on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. This gives ${ }^{22}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)-\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * W^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}, t\right) \tag{5.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

and by Lemma 5.2, $\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)-\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)$ converges uniformly on compact subsets of $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ to a function that is holomorphic on $P_{-}$for every $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. Therefore there is a function $\Psi(\cdot, t)$, holomorphic on $P_{-}$for every $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow \Psi\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \quad \text { on } \bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$; as a consequence of the Cauchy integral formula,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow \Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \quad \text { on } P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Combining with (5.26), we have $\Lambda\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)}$, so $\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \neq 0$ for all $\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \in P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)} \Rightarrow \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)} \quad \text { on } \bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$.
Denote $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}$, and $z(\alpha, t)=Z(h(\alpha, t), t)$. (5.32) gives $Z^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow$ $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$, and with (5.21) it gives $z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t) \Rightarrow z(\alpha, t)$ on $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Moreover by (5.28),

$$
z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)+\int_{0}^{t} w(\alpha, s) d s
$$

so $w=z_{t}$. We denote $Z_{t}=z_{t} \circ h^{-1}$.
Step 2. The limits of $\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}$ and $F_{t}^{\epsilon}$. Observe that by (5.30), for fixed $\epsilon>0, \partial_{t} W^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t)$ is a bounded function on $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, so by (5.31), $\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}=K_{y^{\prime}} * \partial_{t} W^{\epsilon}$ is bounded on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. However we will not use this to pass to the limit for $\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}$, instead, we use (B.4).

By (B.4) and the above observation, since $\frac{\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}$ is bounded and holomorphic on $P_{-}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}=K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\frac{Z_{t}^{\epsilon}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}-b^{\epsilon}\right) \tag{5.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (5.21), (5.24) and Lemma5.2, $\frac{\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}$ converges uniformly on compact subsets of $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ to a function that is holomorphic on $P_{-}$for each $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ and continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. By (5.32), (5.33), we can conclude that $\Psi$ is continuously differentiable and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow \Psi_{t} \quad \text { on } P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$.
Now we consider the limit of $F_{t}^{\epsilon}$ as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Since for fixed $\epsilon>0, \partial_{t} Z_{t}^{\epsilon}=Z_{t t}^{\epsilon}-b^{\epsilon} Z_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}$ is in $L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]\right)$, by (5.25),

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} * \partial_{t} \bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}=K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}^{\epsilon}-b^{\epsilon} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\right) \tag{5.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Lemma 5.2. $K_{y^{\prime}} * \bar{Z}_{t t}^{\epsilon}$ converges uniformly on compact subsets of $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$. With a change of variables

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(b^{\epsilon} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\right)=\frac{-1}{\pi} \int \frac{y^{\prime}}{\left(x^{\prime}-h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)\right)^{2}+y^{\prime 2}} b^{\epsilon} \circ h^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t) \bar{z}_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t) d \alpha \tag{5.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Because (5.21): $z_{t}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow z_{t}, z_{t t}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow z_{t t}$ uniform on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, and (5.14): $\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\bar{z}_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\bar{z}_{t t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), \bar{z}_{t \alpha}, \bar{z}_{t t \alpha}$ exist in

[^10]$L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$ for each $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, with $\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\bar{z}_{t \alpha}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right), \sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|\bar{z}_{t t \alpha}(t)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq$ $C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)$, and by (5.21), (5.20) and $K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(b^{\epsilon} \bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\right)$ converges point-wise on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ to the continuous function
$$
\frac{-1}{\pi} \int \frac{y^{\prime}}{\left(x^{\prime}-h(\alpha, t)\right)^{2}+y^{\prime 2}} b \circ h(\alpha, t) \bar{z}_{t \alpha}(\alpha, t) d \alpha
$$
as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$ and by (5.14), (5.16),
$$
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|F_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq\left(1+\frac{1}{\left|y^{\prime}\right|^{1 / 2}}\right) C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)
$$

Therefore $F$ is continuously differentiable with respect to $t$, with $\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\|F_{t}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)} \leq$ $\left(1+\frac{1}{\left|y^{\prime}\right|^{1 / 2}}\right) C\left(c_{0}, \mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)$ and

$$
\begin{equation*}
F_{t}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \rightarrow F_{t}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \text { as } \epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

point-wise on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$.
Step 3. The limit of $\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}$. By the calculation in $\$ 2.3$ we know $Z_{, \alpha}^{\epsilon}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}^{\epsilon}-i\right)$ is the boundary value of the function $\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} F_{t}^{\epsilon}-\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}+\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}$ on $\partial P_{-}$. Since $\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} F_{t}^{\epsilon}-\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}$ is holomorphic and $\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}=\partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F^{\epsilon}\right)$, where $\partial_{z^{\prime}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right)$, there is a real valued function $\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} F_{t}^{\epsilon}-\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}+\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}=-\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}, \quad \text { in } P_{-} ; \tag{5.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

and by $Z_{, \alpha}^{\epsilon}\left(\bar{Z}_{t t}^{\epsilon}-i\right)=i A_{1}^{\epsilon}$, which is pure imaginary, we know

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}=\text { constant }, \quad \text { on } \partial P_{-} . \tag{5.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Without loss of generality we take the constant $=0$. We now explore a few other properties of $\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}$. Moving $\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}=\partial_{z^{\prime}}\left(\bar{F}^{\epsilon} F^{\epsilon}\right)$ to the right of (5.40) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} F_{t}^{\epsilon}-\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}=-\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right)\left(\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}+\frac{1}{2}\left|F^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}\right), \quad \text { in } P_{-} \tag{5.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Applying $\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}+i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right)=2 \bar{\partial}_{z^{\prime}}$ to (5.42) yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta\left(\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}+\frac{1}{2}\left|F^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}\right)=0, \quad \text { in } P_{-} \tag{5.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

So $\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}+\frac{1}{2}\left|F^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}$ is a harmonic function on $P_{-}$with boundary value $\frac{1}{2}\left|\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}$. On the other hand, it is easy to check that $\lim _{y^{\prime} \rightarrow-\infty}\left(\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} F_{t}^{\epsilon}-\Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\right)=-i$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)=-\frac{1}{2}\left|F^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)\right|^{2}-y+\frac{1}{2} K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\left|\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right) . \tag{5.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

By (5.26), (5.24) and Lemma 5.2,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right) \Rightarrow-\frac{1}{2}\left|F\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)\right|^{2}-y+\frac{1}{2} K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\left|\bar{Z}_{t}\right|^{2}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \text { on } \bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. We write

$$
\mathfrak{P}:=-\frac{1}{2}\left|F\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)\right|^{2}-y+\frac{1}{2} K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\left|\bar{Z}_{t}\right|^{2}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)
$$

$\mathfrak{P}$ is continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ with $\mathfrak{P} \in C\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right], C^{\infty}\left(P_{-}\right)\right)$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{P}=0, \quad \text { on } \partial P_{-} \tag{5.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, since $K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\left|\bar{Z}_{t}^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)$ is harmonic on $P_{-}$, by interior derivative estimate for harmonic functions and by (5.26),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon} \Rightarrow\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P} \quad \text { on } P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$.

Step 4. Conclusion. We now sum up Steps 1-3. We have shown that there are functions $\Psi(\cdot, t)$ and $F(\cdot, t)$, holomorphic on $P_{-}$for each fixed $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, and continuous differentiable on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, with $\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}$ continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, such that $\Psi^{\epsilon} \rightarrow \Psi, \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}} \rightarrow \frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}, F^{\epsilon} \rightarrow F$ uniform on compact subsets of $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right], \Psi_{t}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow \Psi_{t}$, $\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow \Psi_{z^{\prime}}, F_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow F_{z^{\prime}}$ uniform on compact subsets of $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, and $F_{t}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow F_{t}$ pointwise on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. We have also shown there is $\mathfrak{P}$, continuous on $\bar{P}_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$ with $\mathfrak{P}=0$ on $\partial P_{-}$and $\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}$ continuous on $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, such that $\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}^{\epsilon} \rightarrow\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}$ uniformly on compact subsets of $P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right]$, as $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$. Let $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$ in equation (5.40), we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{z^{\prime}} F_{t}-\Psi_{t} F_{z^{\prime}}+\bar{F} F_{z^{\prime}}-i \Psi_{z^{\prime}}=-\left(\partial_{x^{\prime}}-i \partial_{y^{\prime}}\right) \mathfrak{P}, \quad \text { on } P_{-} \times\left[0, T_{0}\right] \tag{5.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

This shows $\Psi, F$ is a generalized solution of the water wave equation in the sense given in \$2.3. Furthermore because of (5.2), (5.4), letting $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$ gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]} \mathcal{E}_{1}(t) \leq M\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)<\infty \tag{5.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left\{\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|F\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}+\sup _{y^{\prime}<0}\left\|\frac{1}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(x^{\prime}+i y^{\prime}, t\right)}-1\right\|_{L^{2}\left(\mathbb{R}, d x^{\prime}\right)}\right\}<C_{0}<\infty \tag{5.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

5.6. The invertability of $\Psi(\cdot, t)$. If in addition $\Sigma(t)=\left\{Z=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \mid \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}\right\}$ is a Jordan curve, then because $\lim _{\left|\alpha^{\prime}\right| \rightarrow \infty} \Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=123$ the domain $\Omega(t)$ bounded above by $\Sigma(t)$ is winded by $\Sigma(t)$ exactly once. By the argument principle, $\Psi(\cdot, t): \bar{P}_{-} \rightarrow \Omega(t)$ is one-to-one and onto, $\Psi^{-1}(\cdot, t): \Omega(t) \rightarrow P_{-}$exists and is holomorphic. By the chain rule, it is easy to check (5.48) is equivalent to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(F \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)_{t}+\bar{F} \circ \Psi^{-1}\left(F \circ \Psi^{-1}\right)_{z}-i=-\left(\partial_{x}-i \partial_{y}\right)\left(\mathfrak{P} \circ \Psi^{-1}\right), \quad \text { on } \Omega(t) \tag{5.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the Euler equation, the first equation of (1.1) in complex form. Let $\overline{\mathbf{v}}=F \circ \Psi^{-1}$, $P=\mathfrak{P} \circ \Psi^{-1}$. Then $(\mathbf{v}, P)$ is a solution of the water wave equation (1.1) in $\Omega(t)$, with fluid interface $\Sigma(t): Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}$.
5.7. The chord-arc interfaces. Now assume at time $t=0$, the interface $Z=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right):=$ $Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right), \alpha^{\prime} \in \mathbb{R}$ is chord-arc, that is, there is $0<\delta<1$, such that

$$
\delta \int_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\beta^{\prime}}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \leq\left|Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)-Z\left(\beta^{\prime}, 0\right)\right| \leq \int_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{\beta^{\prime}}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma, \quad \forall-\infty<\alpha^{\prime}<\beta^{\prime}<\infty
$$

We want to show there is $T_{1}>0$, depending only on $\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)$, such that for $t \in\left[0, \min \left\{T_{0}, \frac{\delta}{T_{1}}\right\}\right]$, the interface $Z=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right):=\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)$ remains chord-arc. We begin with

$$
\begin{equation*}
-z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)+z^{\epsilon}(\beta, t)+z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)-z^{\epsilon}(\beta, 0)=\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\alpha}^{\beta} z_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(\gamma, s) d \gamma d s \tag{5.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $\alpha<\beta$. Because

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}\right|^{2}=2\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}\right|^{2} \operatorname{Re} D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon} \tag{5.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

by Gronwall, for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)\right|^{2} \leq\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)\right|^{2} e^{2 \int_{0}^{t}\left|D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, \tau)\right| d \tau} \tag{5.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

so

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|z_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)\right| \leq\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)\right|\left|D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)\right| e^{\int_{0}^{t}\left|D_{\alpha} z_{t}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, \tau)\right| d \tau} \tag{5.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

by Appendix C, (5.2) and Proposition 2.5,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{\left[0, T_{0}\right]}\left|z_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, t)\right| \leq\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)\right| C\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \tag{5.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^11]therefore for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$,
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{0}^{t} \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|z_{t \alpha}^{\epsilon}(\gamma, s)\right| d \gamma d s \leq t C\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|z_{\alpha}^{\epsilon}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \tag{5.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Now $z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)=Z^{\epsilon}(\alpha, 0)=\Psi(\alpha-\epsilon i, 0)$. Because $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0) \in L_{l o c}^{1}(\mathbb{R})$, and $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\cdot, 0)-1 \in$ $H^{1}(\mathbb{R} \backslash[-N, N])$ for some large $N$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varlimsup_{\epsilon \rightarrow 0} \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|\Psi_{z^{\prime}}(\gamma-\epsilon i, 0)\right| d \gamma \leq \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \tag{5.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $\epsilon=\epsilon_{j} \rightarrow 0$ in (5.52). We get, for $t \in\left[0, T_{0}\right]$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left||z(\alpha, t)-z(\beta, t)|-\left|Z(\alpha, 0)-Z(\beta, 0) \| \leq t C\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right) \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\right| Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \tag{5.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence for all $\alpha<\beta$ and $0 \leq t \leq \min \left\{T_{0}, \frac{\delta}{2 C\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)}\right\}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2} \delta \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \leq|z(\alpha, t)-z(\beta, t)| \leq 2 \int_{\alpha}^{\beta}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(\gamma, 0)\right| d \gamma \tag{5.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

This show that for $\leq t \leq \min \left\{T_{0}, \frac{\delta}{2 C\left(\mathcal{E}_{1}(0)\right)}\right\}, z=z(\cdot, t)$ is absolute continuous on compact intervals of $\mathbb{R}$, with $z_{\alpha}(\cdot, t) \in L_{l o c}^{1}(\mathbb{R})$, and is chord-arc. So $\Sigma(t)=\{z(\alpha, t) \mid \alpha \in \mathbb{R}\}$ is Jordan. This finishes the proof of Theorem 3.4.

## Appendix A. Basic analysis preparations

Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{C}$ be a domain with boundary $\Sigma: z=z(\alpha), \alpha \in I$, oriented clockwise. Let $\mathfrak{H}$ be the Hilbert transform associated to $\Omega$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathfrak{H} f(\alpha)=\frac{1}{\pi i} \mathrm{pv} . \int \frac{z_{\beta}(\beta)}{z(\alpha)-z(\beta)} f(\beta) d \beta \tag{A.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have the following characterization of the trace of a holomorphic function on $\Omega$.
Proposition A.1. 19] a. Let $g \in L^{p}$ for some $1<p<\infty$. Then $g$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function $G$ on $\Omega$ with $G(z) \rightarrow 0$ at infinity if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
(I-\mathfrak{H}) g=0 \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

b. Let $f \in L^{p}$ for some $1<p<\infty$. Then $\mathbb{P}_{H} f:=\frac{1}{2}(I+\mathfrak{H}) f$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function $\mathfrak{G}$ on $\Omega$, with $\mathfrak{G}(z) \rightarrow 0$ as $|z| \rightarrow \infty$.
c. $\mathfrak{H} 1=0$.

Observe that Proposition A. 1 gives $\mathfrak{H}^{2}=I$ in $L^{p}$.
We next present the basic estimates we will rely on for this paper. We start with the Sobolev inequality.
Proposition A. 2 (Sobolev inequality). Let $f \in C_{0}^{1}(\mathbb{R})$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f\|_{L^{\infty}}^{2} \leq 2\|f\|_{L^{2}}\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

hardy-inequality Proposition A. 3 (Hardy's Inequality). Let $f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$, with $f^{\prime} \in L^{2}(\mathbb{R})$. Then there exists $C>0$ independent of $f$ such that for any $x \in \mathbb{R}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\int \frac{(f(x)-f(y))^{2}}{(x-y)^{2}} d y\right| \leq C\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}^{2} \tag{A.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let

$$
\mathbb{H} f(x)=\frac{1}{\pi i} \mathrm{pv} . \int \frac{1}{x-y} f(y) d y
$$

be the Hilbert transform associated with $P_{-}$. Let $f: \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be a function in $\dot{H}^{1 / 2}$, we note that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|f\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}^{2}=\int i \mathbb{H} \partial_{x} f(x) \bar{f}(x) d x=\frac{1}{2 \pi} \iint \frac{|f(x)-f(y)|^{2}}{(x-y)^{2}} d x d y \tag{A.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have the following result on $\dot{H}^{1 / 2}$ functions.
Proposition A.4. Let $f, g \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|g\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \lesssim\left\|f^{-1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left(\|f g\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}+\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\|g\|_{L^{2}}\right) \tag{A.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

The proof is straightforward from the definition of $\dot{H}^{1 / 2}$ and the Hardy's inequality. We omit the details.

Let $A_{i} \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R}), i=1, \ldots m$. Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{1}\left(A_{1}, \ldots, A_{m}, f\right)(x)=\mathrm{pv} . \int \frac{\Pi_{i=1}^{m}\left(A_{i}(x)-A_{i}(y)\right)}{(x-y)^{m+1}} f(y) d y \tag{A.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition A.5. There exist constants $c_{1}>0, c_{2}>0$, such that

1. For any $f \in L^{2}, A_{i}^{\prime} \in L^{\infty}, 1 \leq i \leq m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|C_{1}\left(A_{1}, \ldots, A_{m}, f\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c_{1}\left\|A_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty} \ldots \|} \ldots A_{m}^{\prime}\left\|_{L^{\infty}}\right\| f \|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. For any $f \in L^{\infty}, A_{i}^{\prime} \in L^{\infty}, 2 \leq i \leq m, A_{1}^{\prime} \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|C_{1}\left(A_{1}, \ldots, A_{m}, f\right)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c_{2}\left\|A_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|A_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \ldots\left\|A_{m}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|f\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{A.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

(A.8) is a result of Coifman, McIntosh and Meyer [10. (A.9) is a consequence of the Tb Theorem, a proof is given in 32.

Let $A_{i}$ satisfies the same assumptions as in A.7). Define

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{2}(A, f)(x)=\int \frac{\Pi_{i=1}^{m}\left(A_{i}(x)-A_{i}(y)\right)}{(x-y)^{m}} \partial_{y} f(y) d y \tag{A.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have the following inequalities.
B2 Proposition A.6. There exist constants $c_{3}, c_{4}$ and $c_{5}$, such that

1. For any $f \in L^{2}, A_{i}^{\prime} \in L^{\infty}, 1 \leq i \leq m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|C_{2}(A, f)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c_{3}\left\|A_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \ldots\left\|A_{m}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|f\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. For any $f \in L^{\infty}, A_{i}^{\prime} \in L^{\infty}, 2 \leq i \leq m, A_{1}^{\prime} \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|C_{2}(A, f)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c_{4}\left\|A_{1}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|A_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \ldots\left\|A_{m}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|f\|_{L^{\infty}} \tag{A.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

3. For any $f^{\prime} \in L^{2}, A_{1} \in L^{\infty}, A_{i}^{\prime} \in L^{\infty}, 2 \leq i \leq m$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|C_{2}(A, f)\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq c_{5}\left\|A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|A_{2}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \ldots\left\|A_{m}^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using integration by parts, the operator $C_{2}(A, f)$ can be easily converted into a sum of operators of the form $C_{1}(A, f)$. A.11) and A.12) follow from A.8 and A.9). To get (A.13), we rewrite $C_{2}(A, f)$ as the difference of the two terms $A_{1} C_{1}\left(A_{2}, \ldots, A_{m}, f^{\prime}\right)$ and $C_{1}\left(A_{2}, \ldots, A_{m}, A_{1} f^{\prime}\right)$ and apply A.8) to each term.
prop:half-dir Proposition A.7. There exists a constant $C>0$ such that for any $f, g \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with $f^{\prime} \in L^{2}$ and $g^{\prime} \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \|[f, \mathbb{H}] g\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\|f\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}}\|g\|_{L^{2}}  \tag{A.14}\\
& \left\|[f, \mathbb{H}] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g\right\|_{L^{2}} \leq C\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\|g\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}} \tag{A.15}
\end{align*}
$$

(A.14) is straightforward by Cauchy-Schwarz and the definition of $\dot{H}^{1 / 2}$. (A.15) follows from integration by parts, then Cauchy-Schwarz, Hardy's inequality, the definition of $\dot{H}^{1 / 2}$ and (A.14).

Recall $[f, g ; h]$ as given in (2.1).

Proposition A.8. There exists a constant $C>0$ such that for any $f, g \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with $f^{\prime}, g^{\prime} \in L^{2}$ and $h \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|[f, g ; h]\|_{L^{2}} & \leq C\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|g^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\|h\|_{L^{2}}  \tag{A.16}\\
\|[f, g ; h]\|_{L^{\infty}} & \leq C\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|g^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|h\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.17}
\end{align*}
$$

(A.16) follows directly from Cauchy-Schwarz, Hardy's inequality and Fubini Theorem; (A.17) follows from Cauchy-Schwarz, Hardy's inequality and the mean value Theorem.

Proposition A.9. There exists a constant $C>0$ such that for any $f \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with $f^{\prime} \in L^{2}$, $g \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|[f, \mathbb{H}] g\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\|g\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

eq:b12
eq:b15
(A.18) is straightforward from Cauchy-Schwarz and Hardy's inequality.

Proposition A.10. There exists a constant $C>0$ such that for any $f, g \in C^{1}(\mathbb{R})$ with $f^{\prime}, g^{\prime} \in L^{2}$, and $h \in L^{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}[f,[g, \mathbb{H}]] h\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim\left\|f^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\left\|g^{\prime}\right\|_{L^{2}}\|h\|_{L^{2}} \tag{A.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking derivative under the integral $[f,[g, \mathbb{H}]] h$, (A.19) directly follows from (A.16) and (A.18).

## Appendix B. Identities

B.1. Basic identities. Here we derive a few basic identities from the system (2.9)-(2.8), without assuming $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ being non-self-intersecting. Theses identities provide an alternative way of deriving the quasi-linearization of the system (2.9)-(2.8) in this more general context, they also show that the argument in 21] can be modified, so that the a priori estimate of 21] and the characterization of the energy in $\S 10$ of 21] hold for solutions of the system (2.9)-(2.8) without the non-self-intersecting requirement.

Let $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ be sufficiently regular $\sqrt{24}$ and satisfy (2.9)-(2.8):

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
Z_{t t}+i=i \mathcal{A} Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}},  \tag{B.1}\\
\bar{Z}_{t}=\mathbb{H} \bar{Z}_{t} \\
Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}-1\right), \quad \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1=\mathbb{H}\left(\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $Z$ and $Z_{t}$ are related through (2.6), (2.7):

$$
\begin{equation*}
z(\alpha, t)=Z(h(\alpha, t), t), \quad z_{t}(\alpha, t)=Z_{t}(h(\alpha, t), t) \tag{B.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some (sufficiently regular) homeomorphism $h(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$. Let $\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}:=\mathcal{A} \circ h, A_{1}:=$ $\mathcal{A}\left|Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}$. Precomposing the first equation of (B.1) with $h$ gives (2.3):

$$
\begin{equation*}
z_{t t}+i=i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha} \tag{B.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

We first show that (2.18) can be derived from (B.1) and (B.2). Let $\Psi$ be a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$, continuously differentiable on $\bar{P}_{-}$, such that

$$
\Psi\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right), \quad \Psi_{z^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)
$$

Therefore $z(\alpha, t)=\Psi(h(\alpha, t), t)$ and by the chain rule, $z_{t}=\Psi_{t} \circ h+h_{t} \Psi_{z^{\prime}} \circ h$. Precomposing with $h^{-1}$ then gives

$$
Z_{t}=\Psi_{t}+Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}} h_{t} \circ h^{-1}
$$

dividing by $Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}$ yields

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)=\frac{Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)}-\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right) \tag{B.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that $\frac{\Psi_{t}}{\Psi_{z^{\prime}}}$ is a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$. By Proposition A.1 applying $(I-\mathbb{H})$ to (B.4) then taking the real parts and using the second and third equations of (B.1) to rewrite into the commutator gives (2.18). Conversely, if $h$ satisfies (2.18) for a function $Z$ satisfying the second and third equations of (B.1), expanding the commutator gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{t} \circ h^{-1}=\operatorname{Re}(I-\mathbb{H})\left(\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)=\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}+\frac{1}{2}(I+\mathbb{H})\left(\frac{\bar{Z}_{t}}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right) \tag{B.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

By Proposition A.1, $\frac{1}{2}(I+\mathbb{H})\left(\frac{\bar{Z}_{t}}{\bar{Z}_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-\frac{Z_{t}}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right)$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$, tending to zero at the spatial infinity.

In what follows we use the following notations. We write $U_{1} \equiv U_{2}$, if $(I-\mathbb{H})\left(U_{1}-U_{2}\right)=0$; that is if $U_{1}-U_{2}$ is the boundary value of a holomorphic function on $P_{-}$that tends to zero at infinity.

Assume $Z$ satisfies the second and third equations of (B.1) and $h$ satisfies (2.18), so (B.5) holds.
prop:basic-iden Proposition B.1. Let $U(\cdot, t): \mathbb{R} \rightarrow \mathbb{C}$ be sufficiently regular, and $u=U \circ h$. Assume $U \equiv 0$. We have 1 .

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t} \circ h^{-1} \equiv Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \tag{B.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

2. 

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t t} \circ h^{-1} \equiv Z_{t t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+2 Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(u_{t} \circ h^{-1}-Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right)+Z_{t}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U \tag{B.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

3. 

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1}\left(u_{t t}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha} u\right) \equiv 2 Z_{t t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U+2 Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(u_{t} \circ h^{-1}-Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right)+Z_{t}^{2} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U \tag{B.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Applying the chain rule to $u=U \circ h$ and precompose with $h^{-1}$ gives

$$
u_{t} \circ h^{-1}=\partial_{t} U+\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U h_{t} \circ h^{-1}
$$

Observe that $U \equiv 0$ gives $\partial_{t} U \equiv 0$ and $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \equiv 0$. (B.6) follows from (B.5) and the fact that product of holomorphic functions is holomorphic.

Now we apply (B.6) to $u_{t} \circ h^{-1}-Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U$. This gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t}\left(u_{t}-z_{t} D_{\alpha} u\right) \equiv Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(u_{t} \circ h^{-1}-Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U\right) \tag{B.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Expanding the left hand side by the product rule, and observe that $\partial_{t} D_{\alpha} u=D_{\alpha}\left(u_{t}-\right.$ $\left.z_{t} D_{\alpha} u\right)+z_{t} D_{\alpha}^{2} u$, so

$$
\begin{aligned}
\partial_{t}\left(u_{t}-z_{t} D_{\alpha} u\right) & =u_{t t}-z_{t t} D_{\alpha} u-z_{t} \partial_{t} D_{\alpha} u \\
& =u_{t t}-z_{t t} D_{\alpha} u-z_{t} D_{\alpha}\left(u_{t}-z_{t} D_{\alpha} u\right)-z_{t}^{2} D_{\alpha}^{2} u
\end{aligned}
$$

Precomposing with $h^{-1}$ and substituting in ( $\bar{B} .9$ ) gives (B.7).
((ㅗ.8) follows from ( $\overline{\mathrm{B} .7)}$ ) and the fact that $i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha} u=\left(z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha} u$ and $D_{\alpha^{\prime}} U \equiv 0$.

Now assume $Z$ satisfies (B.1) ${ }^{25}$. Applying ( $\overline{\mathrm{B} .6}$ ) to $\bar{Z}_{t}$ gives $\bar{Z}_{t t} \equiv Z_{t} D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}$. Following the rest of the argument in section 2.2 .1 of (35) gives (2.19). Similarly, applying (B.8) to $\bar{Z}_{t}$ and following the rest of the argument in section 2.2.3 of 35] gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{\mathfrak{a}} \circ h^{-1}=\frac{-\operatorname{Im}\left(2\left[Z_{t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}+2\left[Z_{t t}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}-\left[Z_{t}, Z_{t} ; D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right]\right)}{A_{1}} \tag{B.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[Z_{t}, Z_{t} ; D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right]:=\frac{1}{\pi i} \int \frac{\left(Z_{t}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z_{t}\left(\beta^{\prime}, t\right)\right)^{2}}{\left(\alpha^{\prime}-\beta^{\prime}\right)^{2}} D_{\beta^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\left(\beta^{\prime}, t\right) d \beta^{\prime} \tag{B.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the periodic case studied in [21], the same computations above and Proposition B. 1 hold, and the corresponding equations for (2.18), (2.19), (B.10) can be derived without

[^12]the non-self-intersecting assumption. The periodic version of Proposition B. 1 shows that the argument in [21] can be modified so that the a priori estimate, Theorem 2 of 21] and the characterization of the energy in $\S 10$ of 21 hold more generally without the non-selfintersecting assumption. Proposition B.1 and a small modification of the argument in 21 show that a similar a priori estimate and a similar characterization of the energy as in 21 hold in the whole line case for solutions of (2.9)-(2.8).
B.2. Commutator identities. We include here for reference the various commutator identities that are necessary. The first set: (B.12)-(B.15) has already appeared in [21].
\[

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\partial_{t}, D_{\alpha}\right] } & =-\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) D_{\alpha}  \tag{B.12}\\
{\left[\partial_{t}, D_{\alpha}^{2}\right] } & =-2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) D_{\alpha}^{2}-\left(D_{\alpha}^{2} z_{t}\right) D_{\alpha}  \tag{B.13}\\
{\left[\partial_{t}^{2}, D_{\alpha}\right] } & =\left(-D_{\alpha} z_{t t}\right) D_{\alpha}+2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right)^{2} D_{\alpha}-2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) D_{\alpha} \partial_{t}  \tag{B.14}\\
{\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, D_{\alpha}\right] } & =\left(-2 D_{\alpha} z_{t t}\right) D_{\alpha}-2\left(D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) \partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \tag{B.15}
\end{align*}
$$
\]

eq:c1
eq:c2
eq:c3
eq:c5

We need some additional commutator identities. In general for operators $A, B$ and $C$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[A, B C^{k}\right]=[A, B] C^{k}+B\left[A, C^{k}\right]=[A, B] C^{k}+\sum_{i=1}^{k} B C^{i-1}[A, C] C^{k-i} \tag{B.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

We note that for $f=f(\cdot, t), U_{h} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f=\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} f$. So

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f } & =-\frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} \frac{1}{h_{\alpha}} \partial_{\alpha} f=-U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\} ;  \tag{B.17}\\
{\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right] g } & =U_{h}^{-1}\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] U_{h} g=-\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g . \tag{B.18}
\end{align*}
$$

Applying (B.16) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[\partial_{t},\left(\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)^{2}\right] f } & =\frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f+\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}} f  \tag{B.19}\\
& =-2 U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\}-U_{h}\left\{\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\} \\
{\left[\partial_{t}^{2}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f } & =\partial_{t}\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f+\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] \partial_{t} f  \tag{B.20}\\
& =-\partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\}-U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f_{t}\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

To calculate $\left[i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f$, we use the definition $\mathcal{A} \circ h:=\mathfrak{a} h_{\alpha}$, and $i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}:=i \mathcal{A} \circ h \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}$. We have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f=\left[i \mathcal{A} \circ h \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f=-i U_{h}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\} \tag{B.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Adding (B.20) and (B.21), we conclude that

$$
\begin{gather*}
{\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{\partial_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right] f=-\partial_{t} U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\}-U_{h}\left\{\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f_{t}\right\}}  \tag{B.22}\\
-i U_{h}\left\{\mathcal{A}_{\alpha^{\prime}} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h^{-1}} f\right\}
\end{gather*}
$$

We note that $U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}=\partial_{t}+b \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}}$ where $b:=h_{t} \circ h^{-1}$. Therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}, \mathbb{H}\right]=\left[h_{t} \circ h^{-1}, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \tag{B.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

A straightforward differentiation gives

$$
\begin{align*}
U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} & {[f, \mathbb{H}] g=\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} f, \mathbb{H}\right] g } \\
& +[f, \mathbb{H}]\left(U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} g+\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}} g\right)-\left[f, h_{t} \circ h^{-1} ; g\right] \tag{B.24}
\end{align*}
$$

with an application of (B.18) yields

$$
\begin{align*}
& U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}[f, \mathbb{H}] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g=\left[U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} f, \mathbb{H}\right] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g \\
&+[f, \mathbb{H}] \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h} g-\left[f, h_{t} \circ h^{-1} ; \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} g\right] . \tag{B.25}
\end{align*}
$$

The following commutators are straightforward from the product rule. We have

$$
\begin{align*}
& {\left[Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] f=\left[U_{h}^{-1} \frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}, U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t} U_{h}\right] f} \\
& =-\left\{U_{h}^{-1} \partial_{t}\left(\frac{z_{\alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right)\right\} f=-Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}\left(D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}-\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right) f ;  \tag{B.26}\\
& {\left[\partial_{t}, \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right] f=\partial_{t}\left(\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right) f=\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\left(U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) f ;} \tag{B.27}
\end{align*}
$$

by $i \mathfrak{a} z_{\alpha}=z_{t t}+i$ (2.3),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right] f=\left[\left(z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha}, \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right] f=\left(z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right) f ; \tag{B.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

by (B.16), (B.27), (B.28) and the product rule,

$$
\begin{align*}
& {\left[\partial_{t}^{2}+i \mathfrak{a} \partial_{\alpha}, \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right] f=2 \frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\left(U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) f_{t}+\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\left(U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right)^{2} f} \\
& +\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\left(\partial_{t} U_{h}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}-\partial_{t} D_{\alpha} z_{t}\right) f+\left(z_{t t}+i\right) D_{\alpha}\left(\frac{h_{\alpha}}{z_{\alpha}}\right) f . \tag{B.29}
\end{align*}
$$

## Appendix C. Main quantities controlled by $\mathfrak{E}$

quantities
We list here the various quantities that we have shown in [21] are controlled by polypromials of $\mathfrak{E}(t)$. ${ }^{26}$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|D_{\alpha} \partial_{t} D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(h_{\alpha} d \alpha\right)}, \\
& \left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}} D_{\alpha^{\prime}}^{2} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{\dot{H}^{1 / 2}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \bar{Z}_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}, \\
& \left\|\bar{Z}_{t t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}},\left\|\bar{Z}_{t, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}}, \int\left|D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t}\right|^{2} \frac{d \alpha}{\mathfrak{a}}, \int\left|D_{\alpha} \bar{z}_{t t}\right|^{2} \frac{d \alpha}{\mathfrak{a}},\left\|\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|Z_{t t}+i\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|A_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} ; \tag{C.1}
\end{align*}
$$

- $\left\|\frac{\mathfrak{a}_{t}}{a}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}=\left\|\frac{\mathcal{A}_{t}}{A}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} ;$
- $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{\alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{2}}$;
- $\left\|\frac{h_{t \alpha}}{h_{\alpha}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$;
- $\left\|(I+\mathbb{H}) D_{\alpha^{\prime}} Z_{t}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$;
- $\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|\left(Z_{t t}+i\right) \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} ;$
- $\left\|\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \mathbb{P}_{A} \frac{Z_{t}}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|\mathbb{P}_{A}\left(Z_{t} \partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} \frac{1}{Z, \alpha^{\prime}}\right)\right\|_{L^{\infty}}$.

In addition from (179), (186) of [21,

$$
\left\|D_{\alpha^{\prime}}\left(h_{t} \circ h^{-1}\right)_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \lesssim C(\mathfrak{E}) .
$$

[^13]
## References

[1] T. Alazard, N. Burq \& C. Zuily On the Cauchy problem for gravity water waves. Invent. Math. Vol. 198 (2014) pp.71-163 (Cited on 2.)
[2] T. Alazard, N. Burq \& C. Zuily Strichartz estimates and the Cauchy problem for the gravity water waves equations. Preprint 2014, arXiv:1404.4276 (Cited on 2.)
[3] T. Alazard \& J-M. Delort Global solutions and asymptotic behavior for two dimensional gravity water waves, Preprint 2013, arXiv:1305.4090 [math.AP]. (Cited on 2.)
[4] D. Ambrose, N. Masmoudi The zero surface tension limit of two-dimensional water waves. Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 58 (2005), no. 10, 1287-1315 (Cited on 1.)
[5] T. Beale, T. Hou \& J. Lowengrub Growth rates for the linearized motion of fluid interfaces away from equilibrium Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 46 (1993), no.9, 1269-1301. (Cited on 1.)
[6] G. Birkhoff Helmholtz and Taylor instability Proc. Symp. in Appl. Math. Vol. XIII, pp.55-76. (Cited on 1.)
[7] A. Castro, D. Córdoba, C. Fefferman, F. Gancedo \& J. Gómez-Serrano Finite time singularities for the free boundary incompressible Euler equations Ann. of Math. (2) 178 (2013), no.3. 1061-1134 (Cited on .)
[8] D. Christodoulou, H. Lindblad On the motion of the free surface of a liquid Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 53 (2000) no. 12, 1536-1602 (Cited on 1.)
[9] D. Coutand, S. Shkoller Wellposedness of the free-surface incompressible Euler equations with or without surface tension J. AMS. 20 (2007), no. 3, 829-930. (Cited on 1.)
[10] R. Coifman, A. McIntosh and Y. Meyer L'integrale de Cauchy definit un operateur borne sur $L^{2}$ pour les courbes lipschitziennes Annals of Math, 116 (1982), 361-387. (Cited on 38.)
[11] R. Coifman, G. David and Y. Meyer La solution des conjectures de Calderón Adv. in Math. 48, 1983, pp.144-148. (Cited on .)
[12] W. Craig An existence theory for water waves and the Boussinesq and Korteweg-devries scaling limits Comm. in P. D. E. 10(8), 1985 pp.787-1003 (Cited on 1.)
[13] G. Folland Introduction to partial differential equations Princeton University press, 1976. (Cited on .)
[14] P. Germain, N. Masmoudi, \& J. Shatah Global solutions of the gravity water wave equation in dimension 3 Ann. of Math (2) 175 (2012), no.2, 691-754. (Cited on 2.)
[15] J. Hunter, M. Ifrim \& D. Tataru Two dimensional water waves in holomorphic coordinates Preprint 2014, arXiv:1401.1252 (Cited on .)
[16] M. Ifrim \& D. Tataru Two dimensional water waves in holomorphic coordinates II: global solutions Preprint 2014, arXiv:1404.7583 (Cited on .)
[17] T. Iguchi Well-posedness of the initial value problem for capillary-gravity waves Funkcial. Ekvac. 44 (2001) no. 2, 219-241. (Cited on 1.)
[18] A. Ionescu \& F. Pusateri. Global solutions for the gravity water waves system in 2d, Invent. Math. to appear (Cited on 2.)
[19] J-L. Journé. Calderon-Zygmund Operators, Pseudo-Differential Operators and the Cauchy Integral of Calderon, vol. 994, Lecture Notes in Math. Springer, 1983. (Cited on 37.)
[20] C. Kenig Elliptic boundary value problems on Lipschitz domains Beijing Lectures in Harmonic Analysis, ed. by E. M. Stein, Princeton Univ. Press, 1986, p. 131-183. (Cited on .)
[21] R. Kinsey \& S. Wu A priori estimates for two-dimensional water waves with angled crests Preprint 2014, arXiv1406:7573 (Cited on 1, 2, 5, 6, 8, 9, 10, 12, 39, 40, 41, 42.)
[22] D. Lannes Well-posedness of the water-wave equations J. Amer. Math. Soc. 18 (2005), 605-654 (Cited on 1.)
[23] T. Levi-Civita. Détermination rigoureuse des ondes permanentes d'ampleur finie. Math. Ann., 93(1), 1925. pp.264-314 (Cited on .)
[24] H. Lindblad Well-posedness for the motion of an incompressible liquid with free surface boundary Ann. of Math. 162 (2005), no. 1, 109-194. (Cited on 1.)
[25] V. I. Nalimov The Cauchy-Poisson Problem (in Russian), Dynamika Splosh. Sredy 18, 1974, pp. 104210. (Cited on 1.)
[26] M. Ogawa, A. Tani Free boundary problem for an incompressible ideal fluid with surface tension Math. Models Methods Appl. Sci. 12, (2002), no.12, 1725-1740. (Cited on 1.)
[27] J. Shatah, C. Zeng Geometry and a priori estimates for free boundary problems of the Euler's equation Comm. Pure Appl. Math. V. 61. no. 5 (2008) pp.698-744 (Cited on 1.)
[28] G. G. Stokes. On the theory of oscillatory waves. Trans. Cambridge Philos. Soc., 8: 1847, pp.441- 455. (Cited on .)
[29] G. I. Taylor The instability of liquid surfaces when accelerated in a direction perpendicular to their planes I. Proc. Roy. Soc. London A 201, 1950, 192-196 (Cited on 1.)
[30] S. Wu Well-posedness in Sobolev spaces of the full water wave problem in 2-D Inventiones Mathematicae 130, 1997, pp. 39-72 (Cited on 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 10, 12.)
[31] S. Wu Well-posedness in Sobolev spaces of the full water wave problem in 3-D Journal of the AMS. 12. no. 2 (1999), pp. 445-495. (Cited on 1.)
[32] S. Wu Almost global wellposedness of the 2-D full water wave problem Invent. Math, 177, (2009), no.1, pp. 45-135. (Cited on 2, 12, 38.)
[33] S. Wu Global wellposedness of the 3-D full water wave problem Invent. Math. 184 (2011), no.1, pp.125220. (Cited on 2.)
[34] S. Wu On a class of self-similar 2d surface water waves Preprint 2012, arXiv1206:2208 (Cited on 8.)
[35] S. Wu Wellposedness and singularities of the water wave equations Notes of the lectures given at the Newton Institute, Cambridge, UK, Aug. 2014. (Cited on 5, 40.)
[36] H. Yosihara Gravity waves on the free surface of an incompressible perfect fluid of finite depth, RIMS Kyoto 18, 1982, pp. 49-96 (Cited on 1.)
[37] P. Zhang, Z. Zhang On the free boundary problem of 3-D incompressible Euler equations. Comm. Pure. Appl. Math. V. 61. no. 7 (2008), pp. 877-940 (Cited on 1.)

University of Michigan, Ann Arbor, Mi


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ When there is surface tension, or vorticity, or a bottom, (1.3) doesn't always hold.
    ${ }^{2}$ By non-self-intersecting we mean it is a Jordan curve.
    ${ }^{3}$ A curve is chord-arc if the arc-length and the chord length between any two points on the curve are comparable.
    ${ }^{4}$ That is, $\Sigma(t)$ is homeomorphic to the line $\mathbb{R}$.
    ${ }^{5}$ The problem with velocity $\mathbf{v}(z, t) \rightarrow(c, 0)$ as $|z| \rightarrow \infty$ can be reduced to the one with $\mathbf{v} \rightarrow 0$ at infinity by studying the solutions in a moving frame. $\Sigma(t)$ may tend to two different lines at $+\infty$ and $-\infty$.

[^1]:    ${ }^{6}$ When $\Sigma(t): Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ becomes self-intersecting, it is not physical to assume $P \equiv 0$ on $\Sigma(t)$. So in general we do not consider beyond the regime of non-self-intersecting interfaces.
    ${ }^{7}$ It makes sense to talk about fluid domain only when $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ is non-self-intersecting. Here we just abuse the terminology.
    ${ }^{8}$ Here and in 2.2 we give a generic discussion. The statements are rigorous if the quantities involved are sufficiently regular.

[^2]:    9 [35] has a slightly different and shorter derivation. 21] has the derivation in a periodic setting. The reader may want to consult [21 35] for the derivations. The identities in Appendix B.1 provide yet another derivation of the quasi-linearization and (2.18, 2.19) from (2.9)-2.8), without assuming $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ being non-self-intersecting. We note that (2.20) only makes sense for non-self-intersecting interfaces.

[^3]:    ${ }^{10} \mathcal{A}:=\frac{A_{1}}{\left|Z_{\alpha^{\prime}}\right|^{2}}$ equals zero alongside $-\frac{\partial P}{\partial \mathbf{n}}$.
    ${ }^{11}$ Let $s \geq 4$. as a consequence of $\left(Z_{t}(0), Z_{t t}(0)\right) \in H^{s+1 / 2}(\mathbb{R}) \times H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$ and $a_{0} \geq c_{0}>0, Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}(0)-1 \in$ $H^{s}(\mathbb{R})$. In general by (2.10), $\left(Z_{t}, Z_{t t}\right) \in H^{s+1 / 2} \times H^{s}$ implies $\frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1 \in H^{s}$, and $\left(Z_{t}, \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}}-1\right) \in$ $H^{s+1 / 2} \times H^{s}$ implies $Z_{t t} \in H^{s}$.
    ${ }^{12} T$ depends only on $c_{0},\left\|Z_{t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s+1 / 2}}$ and $\left\|Z_{t t}(0)\right\|_{H^{s}}$.

[^4]:    ${ }^{13} T(e)$ is decreasing with respect to $e$, and $C(e)$ is increasing with respect to $e$.

[^5]:    ${ }^{14}$ It is clear $\mathcal{E}(t)=\mathcal{E}_{1}(t)$ for smooth $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$. Otherwise this equivalence is understood at a formal level, and is made rigorous according to the circumstances.

[^6]:    ${ }^{17} 4.5$ is equivalent to the quasi-linear system (4.6)-(4.7) of 30. The only difference is that 4.5) is in terms of $Z_{t}$ and $Z_{t t}$ and (4.6)-(4.7) of [30] is in terms of the real components $\operatorname{Re} Z_{t}$ and $\operatorname{Re} Z_{t t}$.
    ${ }^{18}$ Some variants of the proof have been given in 32] and 21. We prove (4.10) nevertheless.

[^7]:    ${ }^{19}$ If $(I-\mathbb{H}) g=0$, then $(I-\mathbb{H})(f g)=[f, \mathbb{H}] g$.

[^8]:    ${ }^{20}$ It is an easy consequence of integration by parts.

[^9]:    ${ }^{21}$ By the maximum principle, $\left(K_{y^{\prime}} * \frac{1}{Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}}\right)\left(K_{y^{\prime}} * Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\right) \equiv 1$ on $P_{-}$.

[^10]:    ${ }^{22}$ Because $W^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t)$ and $\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} W^{\epsilon}(\cdot, t):=Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, t\right)-Z_{, \alpha^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(\alpha^{\prime}, 0\right)$ are continuous and bounded on $\mathbb{R}$, $\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, t\right)-\Psi_{z^{\prime}}^{\epsilon}\left(z^{\prime}, 0\right)=K_{y^{\prime}} *\left(\partial_{\alpha^{\prime}} W^{\epsilon}\right)\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)=\partial_{z^{\prime}} K_{y^{\prime}} * W^{\epsilon}\left(x^{\prime}, t\right)$.

[^11]:    ${ }^{23}$ By a similar argument as in $\$ 5.1$

[^12]:    ${ }^{25}$ Here $Z=Z(\cdot, t)$ need not be non-self-intersecting.

[^13]:    ${ }^{26}$ The same proof for the symmetric periodic setting in 21 applies to the whole line setting. We leave it to the reader to check the details.

